Fundamenta Grammatices:

OR THE

FOUNDATION

OF THE

Latin Tongue.

In Two Parts.

The First,

Being an Explanation of the Eight Parts of Speech; with a moſt eaſie Method for the declining of Nouns, terminating the Declenſions, comparing of Adjectives, conjugating of Verbs, *&c.*

The Second,

Being a Methodical Examination and Explanation of *Propria quæ Maribus*, *Quæ Genus* and *As in Præſenti*, both fitted to the meaneſt Capacity; with the meaning of all the neceſſary Rules in the *Syntaxis*, with the particular Examples of each Rule applied; with a *Dictionariolum* or Index thereunto annexed, for the more ready Uſe, Benefit and Eaſe of all thoſe that deſire to be inſtructed in the Latin Tongue.

By *Nich. Farmborow* Schoolmaſter of *Watford.*

Principiis cognitis, extrema multo facilius intelliguntur, Cic. pro Clu.

LONDON,
Printed by *M. C.* for *Robert Clavell*, at the *Peacock* in St. *Paul's* Church-yard, 1690.

THE EPISTLE,

To all Schoolmasters and Instructors of Children in the first Rudiments of Grammar.

Gentlemen,

IF in this as well as the first Edition, I shall be serviceable for the imbuing the minds of Children with those Notions, that are necessary Qualifications to a more easie and ready attaining the Fundamental Parts of Grammar, without which there can be no Decorum or Symetry in the Superstructure) I have obtained my desire. Now I cannot but expect that this, as well as all other Books, should undergo the common Fate, which is, Laudabitur ab his, cul abitur ab illis, some commending, whilst others are criticizing with an Operam & oleum perdidit, and look upon it as useless, and condemn both it and the Author too, with a Malum est non fecisse bonum, either because it is below their sublime Notions (not in the mean time considering for what Capacities it was composed) or because they carp at every thing that's not of their own

Stamp, tho they know not how to compose a bett
Now for the satisfaction of those and my self t
I have to this second Impression affixed my Nam
desiring those that are not satisfied, to be so g
nerous, candid, as to give me some Friend
Advertisements in a private Epistle, and to
so ingenuous with me, as to let me know, where
I have been either deficient or redundant; and
do sincerely promise, upon due Consideration,
acknowledge my Error, and be thankful for such
a Friendly Admonition and amend. In the mea
while if thou wilt be so candid, as to assist
with something more useful in this kind, I
promise to make use of it and lay aside mine ow
till which time I must crave leave to recomme
it as the most useful Book extant in its kind
and the most plain and familiar Explication o
Mr. Lilly's Grammar. I shall say no more, bu
what the Poet said in another case,

—— Si quid novisti rectius istis,
Candidus impertiri si non, his utere mecum. *Hor*

And that I am,

Your Brother,

and Servant,

Watford,
May 12. 1690. *Nicholas Farmborow.*

THE

THE Eight Parts of Speech EXPLAINED.

Q. *WHat is the beginning of Speech?*

A. Letters.

Q. *What do Letters make?*

A. Syllables.

Q. *What do Syllables make?*

A. Words.

Q. *And what do Words make?*

A. Sentences.

Q. *How many Parts are there in Speech?*

A. Eight: Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle, Adverb, Conjunction, Preposition, Interjection.

Q. *How many fold are the eight Parts of Speech?*

A. Two-fold, Declined and Undeclined.

Q. *How many are Declined?*

A. Four: Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle.

Q. *How many are Undeclined?*

A. Four: Adverb, Conjunction, Preposition, Interjection.

Q. *What mean you by this word Declined?*

A. By Declined, I mean the changing of a word into divers Endings, as from one Case, Number, Mood, Tense or Person to another; as *Musa, Musæ,* & *Amo, Amas, Amavi,* &c.

Q. *What mean you by this word Undeclined?*

A. By this word Undeclined, I mean all such words th cannot be changed from one Ending or Terminati to another; as *Hodie* to day, *Ad* to, *Et* and, *&c.*

Q. *Are those four Parts of Speech (which you say a Declined) declined after the same manner?*

A. No, for some are declined with Mood and Ten and some with Case and Gender.

Q. *How many are declined with Mood and Tense?*

A. Only one, and that is a Verb.

Q. *How many are declined with Case and Gender?*

A. Three; Noun, Pronoun and Participle.

Of a Noun.

Q. *What is a Noun?*

A. A Noun is the name of a thing whi may be either seen, felt, heard or understood.

Q. *Give an Example?*

A. As *Manus* an Hand, *Domus* an House.

Q. *How do you know that the word* Manus *an Hand a Noun?*

A. Because it may be seen.

Q. *Is Thunder a Noun or not?*

A. Yes, because it may be heard.

Q. *How many kinds of Nouns are there?*

A. Two; a Noun Substantive and a Noun Adjective.

Q. *What is the difference between a Noun Substantive and a Noun Adjective?*

A. A Noun Substantive standeth by it self (that requireth not another word to be joyned with it shew its signification) a Noun Adjective cannot (t is, cannot shew its signification without another wo joyned with it) a Noun Substantive is declined w one Article, or with two at the most; a Noun A jective is declined with three Articles, or with th Terminations; any thing that you can put [*a*] [*the*] before, and make sense of it, is a Noun Su

ſtantive; any thing that you may joyn Perſon or thing to, is a Noun Adjective; a Noun Adjective may be compared commonly, a Noun Subſtantive cannot, or very ſeldom.

Q. *Is a Man a Noun Subſtantive or a Noun Adjective?*

A. A Noun Subſtantive, becauſe you may put [*a*] or [*the*] before it, and underſtand its ſignification without joyning any thing to it.

Q. *Is the word* [Happy] *a Noun Subſtantive or not?*

A. No, it is a Noun Adjective, becauſe its ſignification cannot be underſtood, without joyning perſon or thing to it.

Q. *Explain it by an Example?*

A. When I ſay—*Happy*, without any other word joyned to it, its ſignification cannot be underſtood; but when —*an happy Man* or the like, its ſignification may be underſtood; whereby I know that the word—*Happy*, is a Noun Adjective; by which reaſon the knowledge of a Noun Subſtantive and a Noun Adjective is found out.

Q. *How many ſorts of Nouns Subſtantives are there?*

A. Two; a Noun Subſtantive Proper and a Noun Subſtantive Common.

Q. *What is the difference between a Noun Subſtantive Proper and a Noun Subſtantive Common?*

A. A Noun Subſtantive Proper, is proper only to the thing it betokeneth, as, *Edvardus* is my Proper Name; a Noun Subſtantive Common, is common to more, as *Homo* is a common Name to all Men.

Q. *Is the word* [City] *a proper or a common Name?*

A. It is a common Name, becauſe every City may be called a City.

Q. *Is* London *a proper or a common Name?*

A. It is a proper Name, becauſe you cannot call every City *London*?

Q. *Is a Woman a proper or a common Name?*

A. It is a common Name, becauſe you may call every Woman a Woman.

Q. Is Sarah *a proper or a common Name?*

A. A proper Name, becauſe we cannot call every Woman *Sarah.*

Q. Is a Town a proper or a common Name?

A. It is a common Name, becauſe you may call every Town a Town.

Q. Is Watford *a proper or a common Name?*

A. A proper Name, becauſe you cannot call every Town *Watford.*

Numbers of Nouns.

Q. How many Numbers are in Nouns?

A. Two, the Singular and the Plural.

Q. How do you know the Singular Number?

A. The Singular Number ſpeaketh but of one, as *Lapis* a Stone.

Q. How do you know the Plural Number?

A. The Plural Number ſpeaketh of more than one, as *Lapides* Stones.

Q. What Number is an Hand?

A. The Singular Number, becauſe it ſpeaketh but of one.

Q. What Number is Fingers?

A. The Plural Number, becauſe it ſpeaketh of more than one.

Q. What Number is a Flock?

A. The Singular Number.

Q. How can that be? when in a Flock there be hundreds of Cattle.

A. Tho there be never ſo many in a Flock, yet it is but one Flock, and therefore of the Singular Number.

Caſes of Nouns.

Q. How many Caſes are there in declining of Nouns?

A. Six, both Singularly and Plurally, the Nominative, the Genitive, the Dative, the Accuſative, the Vocative and the Ablative.

Q. How

Q. *How do you know the Nominative Caſe?*

A. The Nominative Caſe cometh before the Verb.

Q. *What Queſtion doth the Nominative Caſe anſwer to?*

A. It anſwereth to the queſtion — *who* or *what*, as *Magiſter docet*, the Maſter teacheth: Who teacheth? the Maſter teacheth: *Magiſter* is the Nominative Caſe, comes before the Verb *docet*.

Q. *How do you know the Genitive Caſe?*

A. The Genitive Caſe is known by this token [*of*].

Q. *To what queſtion doth the Genitive Caſe anſwer?*

A. To the queſtion *whoſe* or *whereof*, as *Doctrina Magiſtri*, the Learning of the Maſter: Whoſe Learning? The Maſter's.

Q. *How do you know the Dative Caſe?*

A. The Dative Caſe is known by this token [*to*].

Q. *To what queſtion doth the Dative Caſe anſwer?*

A. To this queſtion, *to whom* or *to what*, as *Do librum Magiſtro*, I give a Book to the Maſter: To whom do you give it? To the Maſter.

Q. *How do you know the Accuſative Caſe?*

A. The Accuſative Caſe follows the Verb.

Q. *To what queſtion doth the Accuſative Caſe anſwer?*

A. To the queſtion — *whom* or *what*, as *amo Magiſtrum*, I love the Maſter: Whom do you love? The Maſter.

Q. *How do you know the Vocative Caſe?*

A. The Vocative Caſe is known by calling or ſpeaking to, as *ô Magiſter*! O Maſter!

Q. *What is the Sign of the Vocative Caſe?*

A. [*ô*] is the Sign of the Vocative Caſe.

Q. *How do you know the Ablative Caſe?*

A. The Ablative Caſe is commonly joyned with Prepoſitions ſerving to the Ablative Caſe, as *de Magiſtro*, of (or concerning) the Maſter; *coram Magiſtro*, before (or in preſence of) the Maſter.

Q. *How many Signs are there of the Ablative Caſe?*

A. Seven; — *in*, *with*, *through*, *for*, *from*, *by*, and *than* after the Comparative Degree.

Of Articles.

Q. *From whence are Articles borrowed?*
A. From the Pronouns.
Q. *How many Articles are there?*
A. Three; *hic, hæc, hoc.*
Q. *How are they declined?*
A.

Singulariter	Nom. *hic, hæc, hoc.*	Pluraliter	Nom. *hi, hæ, hæc.*
	Gen. *hujus.*		Gen. *horum, harum, horum.*
	Dat. *huic.*		Dat. *his.*
	Acc. *hunc, hanc, hoc.*		Acc. *hos, has, hæc.*
	Voc. *caret.*		Voc. *caret.*
	Abl. *hoc, hac, hoc,*		Abl. *his.*

Q. *What Genders are the three Articles?*
A. *Hic* is the Masculine, *hæc* is the Feminine, and *hoc* is the Neuter Gender.
Q. *What Gender is* hujus, huic *and* his?
A. All Genders, because they have but one ending.
Q. *What is the Article of the Masculine Gender in all Cases of the Articles?*

	Nom.	Gen.	Dat.	Acc.	Voc.	Abl.
A. Sing.	*hic,*	*hujus,*	*huic,*	*hunc,*	*caret,*	*hoc.*
Plur.	*hi,*	*horum,*	*his,*	*hos,*	*caret,*	*his.*

Q. *What is the Article of the Feminine Gender in all Cases of the Articles?*

	Nom.	Gen.	Dat.	Acc.	Voc.	Abl.
A. Sing.	*hæc,*	*hujus,*	*huic,*	*hanc,*	*caret,*	*hac.*
Plur.	*hæ,*	*harum,*	*his,*	*has,*	*caret,*	*his.*

Q. *What*

Q. *What is the Neuter Gender throughout all the Cases of the Articles?*

		Nom.	Gen.	Dat.	Acc.	Voc.	Abl.
A.	Sing.	*hoc,*	*hujus,*	*huic,*	*hoc,*	*caret,*	*hoc.*
	Plur.	*hæc,*	*horum,*	*his,*	*hæc,*	*caret,*	*his.*

Of Genders.

Q. *How many Genders of Nouns be there?*

A. Seven; the Masculine, the Feminine, the Neuter, the Common of Two, the Common of Three, the Doubtful, and the Epicene.

Q. *How do you know the Masculine Gender?*

A. It is declined with this Article [*hic*] as *hic vir* a Man; all words that are declined with the Article *hic*, are the Masculine Gender.

Q. *How do you know the Feminine Gender?*

A. The Feminine Gender is declined with the Article *hæc*, as *hæc mulier*, a Woman; all Nouns that are declined with the Article *hæc*, are the Feminine Gender.

Q. *How do you know the Neuter Gender?*

A. The Neuter Gender is declined with this Article, *hoc*, as *hoc saxum*, a Stone; all Nouns that are declined with the Article *hoc*, are the Neuter Gender.

Q. *How do you know the Common of two Gender?*

A. The Common of Two is declined with the Articles *hic* and *hæc*, as *hic & hæc parens*, a Father or Mother; all Nouns that are declined with *hic & hæc* are of the Common of two Gender.

Q. *How do you know the Common of three Gender?*

A. The Common of three is declined with *hic*, *hæc* and *hoc*; as *hic, hæc & hoc Felix*, Happy; all Nouns that are declined with *hic, hæc & hoc*, are Adjectives, and of the same Gender as the Substantives are with which they agree.

Q. *How do you know the Doubtful Gender?*

A. The Doubtful Gender is declined with *hic* or *hæc*, as *hic vel hæc dies*, a day; all Nouns that are declined with *hic vel hæc*, are of the Doubtful Gender.

Q. *How do you know the Epicene Gender?*

A. The Epicene Gender is declined with one Article, under which Article both kinds are signified, as *hic passer*, either an he or a she Sparrow; *hæc aquila*, an Eagle, both the He and the She.

Declensions of Nouns.

Q. *How many Declensions of Nouns are there?*

A. Five.

Q. *How do you know what Declension any Noun is of?*

A. By the ending of the Genitive Case Singular.

Q. *What Declension is a Noun of, when the Genitive Case Singular ends in æ.*

A. Of the first Declension.

Q. *What is the Example of the first Declension?*

A. *Musa*, a Song.

Q. *How is the word* Musa *(which is Latin for a Song) declined?*

A.

Singulariter	Nom. *hæc musa*,	a	Song.
	Gen. *hujus musæ*,	of a	
	Dat. *huic musæ*,	to a	
	Acc. *hanc musam*,	the	
	Voc. *ô musa*,	o	
	Abl. *ab hac musa*,	from a	
Pluraliter	Nom. *hæ musæ*,		Songs.
	Gen. *harum musarum*,	of	
	Dat. *his musis*,	to	
	Acc. *has musas*,	the	
	Voc. *ô musæ*,	o	
	Abl. *ab his musis*,	from	

Q. Do

Q. *Do all Nouns of the first Declenſion end in* [is] *in the Dative and Ablative Caſes Plural?*

A. No; *Filia* a Daughter, and *Nata* a Daughter, do make the Dative and the Ablative plural in *is*, or in *abus*; as Dative and Ablative *filiis* or *filiabus*; Dative and Ablative *natis* or *natabus*; but *Dea* a Goddeſs, *Mula* a Mule, *equa* a Mare, *liberta* a Free woman, do make the Dative and Ablative Caſes plural in *abus* only; as *Dativo & Ablativo, deabus, mulabus, equabus, libertabus.*

Q. *Are all Nouns of the firſt Declenſion of the Feminine Gender, that is, are they all declined with the Article* hæc.

A. No;

Scriba, poeta, talpa, dama, advena, verna, } are of the { Maſculine / Doubtful / Com. of two } Gend. { with / many / others.

Q. *What Declenſion is a Noun of, when the Genitive Caſe Singular endeth in* [i]?

A. Of the ſecond Declenſion.

Q. *What is the Example of the ſecond Declenſion?*

A. *Magiſter*, a Maſter.

Q. *How is* Magiſter *declined?*

A.

Singulariter { Nom. *hic magiſter*, a / Gen. *hujus magiſtri*, of a / Dat. *huic magiſtro*, to a / Acc. *hunc magiſtrum*, the / Voc. *ô magiſter*, o / Abl. *ab hoc magiſtro*, from a } Maſter.

Pluraliter { Nom. *hi magiſtri*, / Gen. *horum magiſtrorum*, of / Dat. *his magiſtris*, to / Acc. *hos magiſtros*, the / Voc. *ô magiſtri*, o / Abl. *ab his magiſtris*, from } Maſters.

Q. *Are all Nouns of the second Declenſion of the Maſculine Gender?*

A. No;

humus, domus, } are of the { Fem. } Gend. { with
regnum, pelagus, } { Neut. } { many
ſpecus, pharus, } { Doubt. } { others.

Q. *When the Nominative Singular of the ſecond Declenſion ends in* us, *how muſt the Vocative Singular end?*

A. In *e*, as Nom. *hic dominus*, Voc. *ô domine.*

Q. *Do all Nouns that end in* us, *in the Nominative Singular end in* e, *in the Vocative?*

A. No; *Deus* God makes *ô deus*, and *filius* makes *ô fili* in the Vocative Caſe.

Q. *When the Nominative Caſe Singular of the ſecond Declenſion ends in* ius, *and the word be a proper Name of a Man, how muſt the Vocative end?*

A. In *i*, as Nom. *hic Georgius*, George, Voc. *ô Georgi*, *hic Virgilius*, Voc. *ô Virgili.*

Q. *What Nouns make the Vocative to end in* e *or in* us?

A. Theſe ſix, *agnus* a Lamb, *lucus* a Grove, *vulgus* the common People, *populus* People, *chorus* a Quire, *fluvius* a River; as *agne* or *agnus*, Voc. *luce* or *lucus*, Voc. *vulge* or *vulgus*, Voc. *populo* or *populus*, Voc. *chore* or *chorus*, Voc. *fluvie* or *fluvius.*

Q. *How do the Nominative, the Accuſative and the Vocative Caſes of all Nouns of the Neuter Gender end, of what Declenſion ſoever they be?*

A. They end all alike.

Q. *How do they all end in the Plural Number?*

A. In the Plural Number they end all in *a.*

Q. *Give an Example of a Noun that is of the Neuter Gender and ſecond Declenſion?*

A. *Hoc regnum*, a Kingdom.

Q. *How*

Q. *How is* regnum *declined?*

A.

Singulariter

Nom. *hoc regnum*, a	Kingdom.
Gen. *hujus regni*, of a	
Dat. *huic regno*, to a	
Acc. *hoc regnum*, the	
Voc. *ô regnum*, o	
Abl. *ab hoc regno*, from a	

Pluraliter

Nom. *hæc regna*,	Kingdoms.
Gen. *horum regnorum*, of	
Dat. *his regnis*, to	
Acc. *hæc regna*, the	
Voc. *ô regna*, o	
Abl *ab his regnis*, from	

Q. *Do all Nouns that are of the Neuter Gender in the Plural Number end in* a, *in the Nominative, Accuſative and Vocative Caſes Plural?*

A. No; *ambo* both, and *duo* two, do make the Neuter Gender in the Nominative, Accuſative and Vocative Caſes to end in *o*.

Q. *How is* ambo *declined?*

A.

Pluraliter

Nom. *ambo, ambæ, ambo.*
Gen. *amborum, ambarum, amborum.*
Dat. *ambobus, ambabus, ambobus.*
Acc. *ambos, ambas, ambo.*
Voc. *ambo, ambæ, ambo.*
Abl. *ambobus, ambabus, ambobus.*

Q. *How is* duo *declined?*

A.

Pluraliter

Nom. *duo, duæ, duo.*
Gen. *duorum, duarum, duorum.*
Dat. *duobus, duabus, duobus.*
Acc. *duos, duas, duo.*
Voc. *duo, duæ, duo.*
Abl. *duobus, duabus, duobus.*

Q. *What*

Q. *What Declenſion is a Noun of, when the Genitive Caſe Singular endeth in* is?

A. Of the third Declenſion.

Q. *What are the Examples of the third Declenſion?*

A. *Lapis* a Stone, and *parens* a Father or Mother.

Q. *How is* lapis *declined?*

A.

Singulariter	Nom. *his lapis*, a	}	Stone.
	Gen. *hujus lapidis*, of a		
	Dat. *huic lapidi*, to a		
	Acc. *hunc lapidem*, the		
	Voc. *ô lapis*, o		
	Abl. *ab hoc lapide*, from a		
Pluraliter	Nom. *hi lapides*,	}	Stones.
	Gen. *horum lapidum*, of		
	Dat. *his lapidibus*, to		
	Acc. *hos lapides*, the		
	Voc. *ô lapides*, o		
	Ab *ab his lapidibus*, from		

Q. *How is* parens *declined?*

A.

Singulariter	Nom. *hic & hæc parens*, a	}	Father or Mother.
	Gen. *hujus parentis*, of a		
	Dat. *huic parenti*, to a		
	Acc. *hunc & hanc parentem*, the		
	Voc. *ô parens*, o		
	Abl. *ab hoc & hac parente.*		
Pluraliter	Nom. *hi & hæ parentes.*	}	Fathers or Mothers.
	G. *horum & harum parentum*, of		
	Dat. *his parentibus*, to		
	Acc. *hos & has parentes*, the		
	Voc. *ô parentes*, o		
	Abl. *ab his parentibus*, from		

Q. *Are*

Q. *Are all Nouns of the third Declenſion, of the Maſculine, or Common of two Genders?*

A. No;

Soror, uxor,
onus, opus,
grus, perdix.
} with many others { Fem. Neut. Doubt. } Genders.

Q. *How do the Accuſative and Ablative Caſes Singular, and the Genitive Caſes Plural of the third Declenſion end?*

A. The Accuſative Caſe Singular commonly ends in *em*, but ſometimes in *im*, and ſometimes in *em* and *im*; the Ablative commonly ends in *e*, and ſometimes in *i*, and ſometimes in *e* and *i*; the Genitive Plural ends in *um*, and ſometimes in *ium*.

Q. *What Declenſion is a Noun of, when the Genitive Caſe Singular endeth in us?*

A. Of the Fourth Declenſion.

Q. *What is the Example of the Fourth Declenſion?*

A. *Manus* an Hand.

Q. *How is* Manus *declined?*

A.

Singulariter
Nom. *hæc manus*, an
Gen. *hujus manus*, of an
Dat. *huic manui*, to an
Acc. *hanc manum*, the
Voc. *ô manus*, o
Abl. *ab hac manu*, from an
} Hand.

Pluraliter
Nom. *hæ manus*,
Gen. *harum manuum*, of
Dat. *his manibus*, to
Acc. *has manus*, the
Voc. *ô manus*, o
Abl. *ab his manibus*, from
} Hands.

Q. *Are*

Q. *Are all Nouns of the fourth Declenſion of the Feminine Gender?*

A. No; *Viſus, gradus*, with others, are of the Maſculine Gender.

Q. *What Declenſion is a Noun of, when the Genitive Caſe Singular endeth in* ei?

A. Of the fifth Declenſion.

Q. *What is the Example of the fifth Declenſion?*

A. *Meridies*, a Noon-tide.

Q. *How is* meridies *declined?*

A.

Singulariter	Nom. *hic meridies*,	a	Noon-tide.
	Gen. *hujus meridiei*,	of a	
	Dat. *huic meridiei*,	to	
	Acc. *hunc meridiem*,	the	
	Voc. *ô meridies*,	ô	
	Abl. *ab hoc meridie*,	from a	
Pluraliter	Nom. *hi meridies*,		Noon-tides.
	Gen. *horum meridierum*,	of	
	Dat. *his meridiebus*,	to	
	Acc. *hos meridies*,	the	
	Voc. *ô meridies*,	ô	
	Abl. *ab his meridiebus*,	from	

Q. *Are all Nouns of the fifth Declenſion of the Maſculine Gender?*

A. No; all Nouns of the fifth Declenſion are of the Feminine Gender, except *meridies*, which is the Maſculine, and *dies* a day, which is of the Doubtful Gender in the Singular Number, the Maſculine only in the Plural.

The

The Forming of the Declenſions.

Q. *How do the Genitive Caſes ſingular of the five Declenſions end?*

A. The Genitive Caſe Singular of

Gen. Sing.
- The firſt Declenſion ends in — *æ*, as *muſæ*.
- The ſecond in — *i*, as *magiſtri*.
- The third in — *is*, as *lapidis*.
- The fourth in — *us*, as *manus*.
- The fifth in — *ei*, as *meridiei*.

Q. *How do the Dative Caſes Singular of the five Declenſions end?*

A. The Dative Caſe Singular of

Dat. Sing.
- The firſt Declenſion ends in — *æ*, as *muſæ*.
- The ſecond in — *o*, as *magiſtro*.
- The third in — *i*, as *lapidi*.
- The fourth in — *ui*, as *manui*.
- The fifth in — *ei*, as *meridiei*.

Q. *How do the Accuſative Caſes Singular of the five Declenſions end?*

A. The Accuſative Caſe Singular of

Acc. Sing.
- The firſt Declenſion ends in — *am*, as *muſam*.
- The ſecond in — *um*, as *magiſtrum*.
- The third in — *em*, as *lapidem*.
- The fourth in — *um*, as *manum*.
- The fifth in — *em*, as *meridiem*.

Q. *How do the Vocative Caſes Singular of the five Declenſions end?*

A. Like the Nominatives.

Q. *How do the Ablative Caſes Singular of the five Declenſions end?*

A. The Ablative Caſe Singular of

Abl. Sing.
- The firſt Declenſion ends in — *a*, as *muſa*.
- The ſecond in — *o*, as *magiſtro*.
- The third in — *e*, as *lapide*.
- The fourth in — *u*, as *manu*.
- The fifth in — *e*, as *meridie*.

Q. How

Q. *How do the Nominative Cases Plural of the five Declensions end?*

A. The Nominative Case Plural of

Nom. Plural.
- The first Declension ends in —*æ*, as *musæ*.
- The second in —— —— *i*, as *magistri*.
- The third in—— —— —— *es*, as *lapides*.
- The fourth in—— —— —— *us*, as *manus*.
- The fifth in—— —— —— *es*, as *meridies*.

Q. *How do the Genitive Cases Plural of the five Declensions end?*

A. The Genitive Case Plural of

Gen. Plur.
- The first Declension ends in—*arum*, as *musarum*.
- The second in—— —— —— *orum*, as *magistrorum*
- The third in—— —— —— *um*, as *lapidum*.
- The fourth in—— —— —— *uum*, as *manuum*.
- The fifth in—— —— —— *erum*, as *meridierum*

Q. *How do the Dative Cases Plural of the five Declensions end?*

A. The Dative Case Plural of

Dat. Plur.
- The first Declension ends in—*is*, as *musis*.
- The second in—— —— —— *is*, as *magistris*.
- The third in—— —— —— *bus*, as *lapidibus*.
- The fourth in—— —— —— *ibus*, as *manibus*.
- The fifth in—— —— —— *ebus*, as *meridiebu*

Q. *How do the Accusative Cases Plural of the five Declensions end?*

A. The Accusative Case Plural of

Acc. Plur.
- The first Declension ends in—*as*, as *musas*.
- The second in—— —— —— *os*, as *magistros*.
- The third in—— —— —— *es*, as *lapides*.
- The fourth in—— —— —— *us*, as *manus*.
- The fifth in —— —— —— *es*, as *meridies*.

The Vocatives are formed like the Nominatives, a
the Ablatives like the Datives.

T

The Declining of Adjectives.

Q. *How many kinds of Nouns Adjectives are there?*

A. Two; Nouns Adjectives of three Terminations, and Nouns Adjectives of three Articles.

Q. *After what manner are Nouns Adjectives of three Terminations declined?*

A. After the first and second Declensions, that is, the first Termination or Ending is like to a Noun of the second Declension Masculine Gender; the second like a Noun of the first Declension; and the third like a Noun of the second Declension Neuter Gender; as *bonus jocus, bona musa, bonum regnum.*

Q. *What is the Example of a Noun Adjective of three Terminations?*

A. *Bonus.*

Q. *How is* bonus *declined?*

Singulariter	Nom.	*bonus, bona, bonum.*
	Gen.	*boni, bonæ, boni.*
	Dat.	*bono, bonæ, bono.*
	Acc.	*bonum, bonam, bonum.*
	Voc.	*bone, bona, bonum.*
	Abl.	*bono, bona, bono.*
Pluraliter	Nom.	*boni, bonæ, bona.*
	Gen.	*bonorum, bonarum, bonorum.*
	Dat.	*bonis.*
	Acc.	*bonos, bonas, bona.*
	Voc.	*boni, bonæ, bona.*
	Abl.	*bonis.*

Q. *Are all Nouns Adjectives of three Terminations, declined like* bonus?

A. No; there are some which make the Genitive Case Singular in *ius*, and the Dative in *i*; as *unus, una, unum.*

Q. How

Q. *How is* unus *declined?*

A.

Singulariter
- Nom. *unus, una, unum.*
- Gen. *unius.*
- Dat. *uni.*
- Acc. *unum, unam, unum.*
- Voc. *une, una, unum.*
- Abl. *uno, una, uno.*

Pluraliter
- Nom. *uni, unæ, una.*
- Gen. *unorum, unarum, unorum.*
- Dat. *unis.*
- Acc. *unos, unas, una.*
- Voc. *uni, unæ, una.*
- Abl. *unis.*

Q. *Hath* unus,una, unum, *always the Plural Number*

A. *Unus* hath not the Plural Number, but when it is joyned to a word that wants the Singular Numbe as *unæ litteræ*, one Letter.

Q. *What words are declined like* unus, una, unum?

A. *Totus, ſolus, ullus, alius, alter, uter*, and Neute with their Compounds, only the five laſt lack th Vocative Caſe.

Q. *After what manner are Nouns Adjectives of thre Articles declined?*

A. After the third Declenſion.

Q. *What are the Examples of Nouns Adjectives three Articles?*

A. *Felix* happy, and *triſtis* ſad.

Q. *How is* Felix *declined?*

A.

Singulariter
- Nom. *hic, hæc & hoc Felix.*
- Gen. *hujus felicis.*
- Dat. *huic felici.*
- Acc. *hunc & hanc felicem, & hoc felix.*
- Voc. *ô felix.*
- Abl. *ab hoc, hac & hoc felice vel felici.*

Pl

Pluraliter
Nom. *hi & hæ felices, & hæc felicia.*
Gen. *horum, harum & horum felicium.*
Dat. *his felicibus.*
Acc. *hos & has felices, & hæc felicia.*
Voc. *ô felices, & o felicia.*
Abl. *ab his felicibus.*

How is triſtis *declined?*

Singulariter
Nom. *hic & hæc triſtis, & hoc triſte.*
Gen. *hujus triſtis.*
Dat. *huic triſti.*
Acc. *hunc & hanc triſtem, & hoc triſte.*
Voc. *ô triſtis, & ô triſte.*
Abl. *ab hoc triſti.*

Pluraliter
Nom. *hi & hæ triſtes, & hæc triſtia.*
Gen. *horum, harum & horum triſtium.*
Dat. *his triſtibus.*
Acc. *hos & has triſtes, & hæc triſtia.*
Voc. *ô triſtes, & ô triſtia.*
Abl. *ab his triſtibus.*

Compariſon of Nouns.

WHat Nouns may be compared?

A. Nouns Adjectives may be compared.

May all Nouns Adjectives be compared?

No; only ſuch whoſe ſignification may increaſe or be diminiſhed, that is, whoſe ſignification may be made more or leſs, as hard, harder, hardeſt, &c.

How many degrees of Compariſon are there?

Three, the Poſitive, the Comparative, and the Superlative.

How do you know the Poſitive Degree?

The Poſitive betokeneth the thing abſolutely without exceſs, as *durus* hard.

How do you know the Comparative Degree?

A. The

A. The Comparative ſomewhat exceedeth his Poſit in ſignification, as *durior* harder.

Q. *From whence is the Comparative Degree formed?*

A. From the firſt Caſe of his Poſitive that endeth in by putting thereto *or* and *us*.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. Duri is the firſt Caſe of the Poſitive that endeth i from which (by putting thereto *or* and *us*) is form the Comparative *durior*, as *hic & hæc durior, & durius*; from *triſti* the firſt Caſe of the Poſitive t endeth in *i*, is formed *hic & hæc triſtior, & hoc triſt* the Comparative, from *dulci* is formed *hic & dulcior, & hoc dulcius* the Comparative.

Q. *How do you know the Superlative Degree?*

A. The Superlative exceedeth his Poſitive in the high Degree, as *duriſſimus* hardeſt.

Q. *Whence is the Superlative formed?*

A. From the firſt Caſe of his Poſitive that endeth in by putting thereto *s* and *ſimus*, as from *duri* (by p ting to *s* is made *duris*, unto which (by putting the to) *ſimus*, is made *duriſſimus* the Superlative, fr *triſti* is formed *triſtiſſimus*, and from *dulci* is form *dulciſſimus*.

Q. *Do all Adjectives that are compared, form th Comparative and Superlative Degrees after the ſa manner?*

A. No.

Q. *How many Exceptions are there from the gene Rules?*

A. Four.

Q. *Which is the firſt Exception?*

A. Theſe that follow, *bonus, melior, optimus*, not *bon bonior, boniſſimus*; *malus, pejor, peſſimus*; *magn major, maximus*; *parvus, minor, minimus*; *mult plurimus*; *multa, plurima*; *multum, plus, plurimu*

Q. *What is the ſecond Exception from theſe gene Rules?*

A. Wh

When the Positive endeth in *er*, then the Superlative shall be formed of the Nominative Case, by putting to *rimus*.

Q. Give an Example?

A. From the Positive Degree, *pulcher* fair, by putting thereto *rimus*, is formed *pulcherrimus* the Superlative.

Q. What is the third Exception from these general Rules?

A. These Nouns that end in *lis* in the Positive, make the Superlative by changing *is* into *limus*, as from *humilis* the Positive, is formed *humillimus* the Superlative; from *similis*, *simillimus*; from *facilis*, *facillimus*; from *agilis*, *agillimus*; from *gracilis*, *gracillimus*; from *docilis* is formed the Superlative *docillimus*.

Q. How do all other Nouns Adjectives that end in lis, *form their Superlative Degree.*

A. They follow the general Rule aforegoing, that is, they form their Superlative from the first Case of the Positive that endeth in *i*, by putting to *ſ* and *simus*, as from *utilis* the Positive is formed *utiliſſimus* the Superlative.

Q. What is the fourth Exception from these general Rules?

A. If a Vowel comes before *us*, it is then compared by the Adverbs *magis* more, and *maxime* most.

Q. What do you mean, when you ſay, if a Vowel come before us?

A. If either *a*, *e*, *i*, *o* or *u*, comes before the Syllable *us*, as *pius* godly, Positive; *magis pius* more godly, Comparative; *maxime pius* most godly, Superlative.

The

The Comparing of Adjectives.

		Pos.	Com.	Sup.
Singulariter	Nom.	bonus,	melior,	optimus,
		bona,	melior,	optima,
		bonum,	melius,	optimum.
	Gen.	boni,	melioris,	optimi,
		bonæ,	melioris,	optimæ,
		boni,	melioris,	optimi.
	Dat.	bono,	meliori,	optimo,
		bonæ,	meliori,	optimæ,
		bono,	meliori,	optimo.
	Acc.	bonum,	meliorem,	optimum,
		bonam,	meliorem,	optimam,
		bonum,	melius,	optimum.
	Voc.	bone,	melior,	optime,
		bona,	melior,	optima,
		bonum,	melius,	optimum.
	Abl.	bono,	meliori,	optimo,
		bona,	meliori,	optima,
		bono,	meliori,	optimo.
Pluraliter	Nom.	boni,	meliores,	optimi,
		bonæ,	meliores,	optimæ,
		bona,	meliora,	optima,
	Gen.	bonorum,	meliorum,	optimorum,
		bonarum	meliorum,	optimarum,
		bonorum,	meliorum,	optimorum.
	Dat.	bonis,	melioribus,	optimis.
	Acc.	bonos,	meliores,	optimos,
		bonas,	meliores,	optimas,
		bona,	meliora,	optima.
	Voc.	boni,	meliores,	optimi,
		bonæ,	meliores,	optimæ,
		bona,	meliora,	optima.
	Abl.	bonis,	melioribus,	optimis.

		Pos.	Com.	Sup.
Singulariter	Nom.	*tristis,*	*tristior,*	*tristissimus,*
		tristis,	*tristior,*	*tristissima,*
		triste,	*tristius,*	*tristissimum.*
	Gen.	*tristis,*	*tristioris,*	*tristissimi,*
		tristis,	*tristioris,*	*tristissimæ,*
		tristis,	*tristioris,*	*tristissimi.*
	Dat.	*tristi,*	*tristiori,*	*tristissimo,*
		tristi,	*tristiori,*	*tristissimæ,*
		tristi,	*tristiori,*	*tristissimo.*
	Acc.	*tristem,*	*tristiorem,*	*tristissimum,*
		tristem,	*tristiorem,*	*tristissimam,*
		triste,	*tristius,*	*tristissimum.*
	Voc.	*tristis,*	*tristior,*	*tristissime,*
		tristis,	*tristior,*	*tristissima,*
		triste,	*tristius,*	*tristissimum.*
	Abl.	*tristi,*	*tristiori,*	*tristissimo,*
		tristi,	*tristiori,*	*tristissima,*
		tristi,	*tristiori,*	*tristissimo.*
Pluraliter	Nom.	*tristes,*	*tristiores,*	*tristissimi,*
		tristes,	*tristiores,*	*tristissimæ,*
		tristia,	*tristiora,*	*tristissima,*
	Gen.	*tristium,*	*tristiorum,*	*tristissimorum,*
		tristium,	*tristiarum,*	*tristissimarum,*
		tristium,	*tristiorum,*	*tristissimorum.*
	Dat.	*tristibus,*	*tristioribus,*	*tristissimis.*
	Acc.	*tristes,*	*tristiores,*	*tristissimos,*
		tristes,	*tristiores,*	*tristissimas,*
		tristia,	*tristiora,*	*tristissima.*
	Voc.	*tristes,*	*tristiores,*	*tristissimi,*
		tristes,	*tristiores,*	*tristissimæ,*
		tristia,	*tristiora,*	*tristissima.*
	Abl.	*tristibus,*	*tristioribus,*	*tristissimis.*

		Pos.	Comp.	Sup.
Singulariter	Nom.	tener,	tenerior,	tenerrimus,
		tenera,	tenerior,	tenerrima,
		tenerum,	tenerius,	tenerrimum.
	Gen.	teneri,	tenerioris,	tenerrimi,
		teneræ,	tenerioris,	tenerrimæ,
		teneri,	tenerioris,	tenerrimi.
	Dat.	tenero,	teneriori,	tenerrimo,
		teneræ,	teneriori,	tenerrimæ,
		tenero,	teneriori,	tenerrimo.
	Acc.	tenerum,	teneriorem,	tenerrimum
		teneram,	teneriorem,	tenerrimam
		tenerum,	tenerius,	tenerrimum.
	Voc.	tener,	tenerior,	tenerrime,
		tenera,	tenerior,	tenerrima,
		tenerum,	tenerius,	tenerrimum.
	Abl.	tenero,	teneriori,	tenerrimo,
		tenera,	teneriori,	tenerrima,
		tenero,	teneriori,	tenerrimo.
Pluraliter	Nom.	teneri,	teneriores,	tenerrimi,
		teneræ,	teneriores,	tenerrimæ,
		tenera,	teneriora,	tenerrima.
	Gen.	tenerorum,	teneriorum,	tenerrimorum
		tenerarum,	teneriorum,	tenerrimarum
		tenerorum,	teneriorum,	tenerrimorum
	Dat.	teneris,	tenerioribus,	tenerrimis.
	Acc.	teneros,	teneriores,	tenerrimos,
		teneras,	teneriores,	tenerrimas,
		tenera,	teneriora,	tenerrima.
	Voc.	teneri,	teneriores,	tenerrimi,
		teneræ,	teneriores,	tenerrimæ,
		tenera,	teneriora,	tenerrima.
	Abl.	teneris,	tenerioribus,	tenerrimis.

	Pos.	Comp.	Sup.
Nom.	*audax,*	*audacior,*	*audaciſſimus,*
	audax,	*audacior,*	*audaciſſima,*
	audax,	*audacius,*	*audaciſſimum.*
Gen.	*audacis,*	*audacioris,*	*audaciſſimi,*
	audacis,	*audacioris,*	*audaciſſimæ,*
	audacis,	*audacioris,*	*audaciſſimi.*
Dat.	*audaci,*	*audaciori,*	*audaciſſimo,*
	audaci,	*audaciori,*	*audaciſſimæ,*
	audaci,	*audaciori,*	*audaciſſimo.*
Acc.	*audacem,*	*audaciorem,*	*audaciſſimum,*
	audacem,	*audaciorem,*	*audaciſſimam,*
	audax,	*audacius,*	*audaciſſimum.*
Voc.	*audax,*	*audacior,*	*audaciſſime,*
	audax,	*audacior,*	*audaciſſima,*
	audax,	*audacius,*	*audaciſſimum.*
Abl.	*audace, i,*	*audaciori,*	*audaciſſimo,*
	audace, i,	*audaciori,*	*audaciſſima,*
	audace, i,	*audaciori,*	*audaciſſimo.*
Nom.	*audaces,*	*audaciores,*	*audaciſſimi,*
	audaces,	*audaciores,*	*audaciſſimæ,*
	audacia,	*audaciora,*	*audaciſſima.*
Gen.	*audacium,*	*audaciorum,*	*audaciſſimorum,*
	audacium,	*audaciorum,*	*audaciſſimarum,*
	audacium,	*audaciorum,*	*audaciſſimorum.*
Dat.	*audacibus,*	*audacioribus,*	*audaciſſimis.*
Acc.	*audaces,*	*audaciores,*	*audaciſſimos,*
	audaces,	*audaciores,*	*audaciſſimas,*
	audacia,	*audaciora,*	*audaciſſima.*
Voc.	*audaces,*	*audaciores,*	*audaciſſimi,*
	audaces,	*audaciores,*	*audaciſſimæ,*
	audacia,	*audaciora,*	*audaciſſima.*
Abl.	*audacibus,*	*audacioribus,*	*audaciſſimis.*

Adjectives compared by *Magis* and *Maxi*

		Pos.	Comp.	Sup
Singulariter	Nom.	*pius, pia, pium,*	*magis*	*pius, pia, pium,*	*maxime*	*piu pia, piu*
	Gen.	*pii, piæ, pii,*	*magis*	*pii, piæ, pii,*	*maxime*	*pii, piæ pii,*
	Dat.	*pio, piæ, pio,*	*magis*	*pio, piæ, pio,*	*maxime*	*pio, piæ pio,*
	Acc.	*pium, piam, pium,*	*magis*	*pium, piam, pium,*	*maxime*	*piu pia pii*
	Voc.	*pie, pia, pium,*	*magis*	*pie, pia, pium,*	*maxime*	*pie pia piu*
	Abl.	*pio, pia, pio,*	*magis*	*pio, pia, pio,*	*maxime*	*pio pia pie*
Pluraliter	Nom.	*pii, piæ, pia,*	*magis*	*pii, piæ, pia,*	*maxime*	*pii pia pia*
	Gen.	*piorum, piarum, piorum,*	*magis*	*piorum, piarum, piorum,*	*maxime*	*pio emonit ken of*
	Dat.	*piis,*	*magis*	*piis,*	*maxime*	*pii x; hic*
	Acc.	*pios, pias, pia,*	*magis*	*pios, pias, pia,*	*maxime*	*pio pia pia*
	Voc.	*pii, piæ, pia,*	*magis*	*pii, piæ, pia,*	*maxime*	*pii pia pia*
	Abl.	*piis,*	*magis*	*piis,*	*maxime*	*pii From wh*

Of the Pronouns.

What is a Pronoun?

A. A Pronoun is a part of Speech much like to Noun, which is used in shewing or rehearsing.

How many Pronouns are there?

Fifteen; *ego, tu, sui, ille, ipse, iste, hic, is, meus, tuus, us, noster, vester, nostras, vestras.*

How many Pronouns have the Vocative Case?

Four; *tu, meus, noster* and *nostras.*

How many want the Vocative Case?

Eleven; *ego, sui, ille, ipse, iste, hic, is, tuus, suus, ster* and *vestras.*

What may be added to them?

Their Compounds; *egomet, tute, idem,* and also *qui, e, quod.*

Into how many kinds are Pronouns divided?

Into four kinds especially; 1. Primitives, 2. Demonatives, 3. Relatives, and 4. Derivatives.

How many Pronouns Primitives are there?

Eight; *ego, tu, sui, ille, ipse, iste, hic* and *is.*

Why be they called Primitives?

Because they are not derived from others.

What else be they called?

Demonstratives, because they shew a thing not spoken of before.

How many Pronouns Relatives are there?

Six; *hic, ille, iste, is, idem* and *qui.*

Why be they called Relatives?

Because they rehearse a thing not spoken of before.

How many Pronouns Derivatives are there?

Seven; *meus, tuus, suus, noster, vester, nostras, vestras.*

Why be they Derivatives?

Because they be derived from their Primitives — *mei, i, sui, nostri* and *vestri.*

From what is the Derivative meus *derived?*

A. From the Primitive *mei*; *tuus* from the Primitive *tui*; *ſuus* from *ſui*; *noſter* and *noſtras* from *noſtrî*; and *veſter* and *veſtras* from the Primitive *veſtrî*.

Q. How many things belong to a Pronoun?

A. Five; 1. Number, 2. Caſe, 3. Gender, 4. Declenſion, and 5. Perſon.

The Declenſion of Pronouns.

Q. How many Declenſions of Pronouns are there?

A. Four.

Q. How many Pronouns are of the firſt Declenſion?

A. Three;—*ego*, *tu* and *ſui*.

Q. How doth the Genitive Caſe Singular of the Declenſion of Pronouns end?

A. In *i*, as Gen. *me-i*, Gen. *tu-i*, Gen. *ſu-i*.

Q. How is ego *declined?*

A.

Singulariter	Nom. *ego.*	Pluraliter	Nom. *nos.*
	Gen. *mei.*		Gen. *noſtrum, vel noſtrûm.*
	Dat. *mihi.*		Dat. *nobis.*
	Acc. *me.*		Acc. *vos.*
	Voc. *caret.*		Voc. *caret.*
	Abl. *a me.*		Abl. *a nobis.*

Q. How is tu *declined?*

A.

Singulariter	Nom. *tu.*	Pluraliter	Nom. *vos.*
	Gen. *tui.*		Gen. *veſtrum, vel veſtrûm.*
	Dat. *tibi.*		Dat. *vobis.*
	Acc. *te.*		Acc. *vos.*
	Voc. *ô tu.*		Voc. *ô vos.*
	Abl. *a te.*		Abl. *a vobis.*

Q. How is ſui *declined?*

A.

Singulariter and Pluraliter	Nom. *caret.*		Acc. *ſe.*
	Gen. *ſui.*		Voc. *caret.*
	Dat. *ſibi.*		Abl. *a ſe.*

How many Pronouns are of the ſecond Declenſion?

Six;—*ille, ipſe, iſte, hic, is* and *qui.*

How do the Genitive Caſes Singular of the ſecond Declenſion of Pronouns end?

In *ius*, and ſometimes in *jus*; as Gen. *iſt-ius*, Gen. *ill-ius*, Gen. *ipſ-ius*, Gen. *hu-jus*, Gen. *e-jus*, and Gen. *u-jus.*

How is iſte *declined?*

Singulariter		Pluraliter	
m. *iſte, iſta, iſtud.*		Nom. *iſti, iſtæ, iſta.*	
n. *iſtius.*		Gen. *iſtorum, iſtarum, iſto-*	
iſti.		Dat. *iſtis.*	(*rum.*
. *iſtum, iſtam, iſtud.*		Acc. *iſtos, iſtas, iſta.*	
. *caret.*		Voc. *caret.*	
. *iſto, iſta, iſto.*		Abl. *iſtis.*	

How is ille *declined?*

Like *iſte*, and ſo is *ipſe*, except in the Nominative and Accuſative Caſes Singular, *ipſe* makes *ipſum*.

Decline ille?

Singulariter		Pluraliter	
n. *ille, illa, illud.*		Nom. *illi, illæ, illa.*	
. *illius.*		Gen. *illorum, illarum, illo-*	
illi.		Dat. *illis.*	(*rum.*
. *illum, illam, illud.*		Acc. *illos, illas, illa.*	
. *caret.*		Voc. *caret.*	
illo, illa, illo.		Abl. *illis.*	

Decline ipſe?

Singulariter		Pluraliter	
n. *ipſe, ipſa, ipſum.*		Nom. *ipſi, ipſæ, ipſa.*	
. *ipſius.*		Gen. *ipſorum, ipſarum, ip-*	
ipſi.		Dat. *ipſis.*	(*ſorum.*
ipſum, ipſam, ipſum.		Acc. *ipſos, ipſas, ipſa.*	
caret.		Voc. *caret.*	
ipſo, ipſa, ipſo.		Abl. *ipſis.*	

Q. *How is* hic *declined?*
A. Nom. *hic, hæc, hoc,* as before in the Nouns.
Q. *How is* is *declined?*

A. Singulariter		Pluraliter
Nom. *is, ea, id.*		Nom. *ii, eæ, ea.*
Gen. *ejus.*		Gen. *eorum, earum, eorum.*
Dat. *ei.*		Dat. *iis, vel eis.*
Acc. *eum, eam, id.*		Acc. *eos, eas, ea.*
Voc. *caret.*		Voc. *caret.*
Abl. *eo, ea, eo.*		Abl. *iis, vel eis.*

Q. *How is* qui *declined?*

A. Singulariter		Pluraliter
Nom. *qui, quæ, quod.*		Nom. *qui, quæ, quæ.*
Gen. *cujus.*		Gen. *quorum, quarum, quorum.*
Dat. *cui.*		Dat. *quibus, vel queis.*
Acc. *quem, quam, quod.*		Acc. *quos, quas, quæ.*
Voc. *caret,*		Voc. *caret.*
Abl. *quo, quæ, quo, vel qui.*		Abl. *quibus vel queis.*

Q. *How are* quis *and* quid *declined?*
A. *Quis* and *quid* are declined like *qui*, whether they are Interrogatives or Indefinites.
Q. *How is* quicquid *declined?*
A.

Nom. { *quis, quis.* / *quicquid.* } Acc. *quicquid.* Abl. { *quoquo* / *quaquo* / *quoquo* }

Q. *What is* quid?
A. *Quid* is always a Substantive of the Neuter Gender.
Q. *How many Pronouns are of the third Declension?*
A. Five; *meus, tuus, suus, noster* and *vester.*
Q. *How are they declined?*
A. Like Nouns Adjectives of three Terminations.
Q. *How doth the Genitive Case Singular of the Declension of Pronouns end?*
A. In *i* or in *æ*, as *mei, meæ, mei.*

Q. D

. *Decline* meus.

Singulariter	Pluraliter
om. *meus, mea, meum.*	Nom. *mei, meæ, mea.*
en. *mei, meæ, mei.*	Gen. *meorum, mearum, meorum.*
at. *meo, meæ, meo.*	Dat. *meis.*
cc. *meum, meam, meum.*	Acc. *meos, meas, mea.*
oc. *mi, mea, meum.*	Voc. *mei, meæ, mea.*
bl. *meo, mea, meo.*	Abl. *meis.*

. *How are* noſter, tuus, ſuus *and* veſter *declined?*
Like *meus*, except only *tuus*, *ſuus*, *veſter* want the Vocative Caſe.
. *How many Pronouns are of the fourth Declenſion?*
Two; *noſtras*, *veſtras*, and alſo the Noun *cujas*.
. *How doth the Genitive Caſe Singular of the fourth Declenſion end?*
In *atis*, as *noſtr-atis*, *veſtr-atis*, *cuj-atis*.
. *How is* noſtras *declined?*

Nom. *hic & hæc noſtras, & hoc noſtrate.*
Gen. *hujus noſtratis.*
Dat. *huic noſtrati.*
Acc. *hunc & hanc noſtratem, & hoc noſtrate.*
Voc. *ô noſtras, & ô noſtrate.*
Abl. *ab hoc, hac & hoc noſtrate, vel noſtrati.*

Nom. *hi & hæ noſtrates, & hæc noſtratia.*
Gen. *horum, harum & horum noſtratium.*
Dat. *his noſtratibus.*
Acc. *hos & has noſtrates, & hæc noſtratia.*
Voc. *ô noſtrates & ô noſtratia.*
Abl. *ab his noſtratibus.*

. *What are* noſtras, veſtras, *and the Noun* cujas *called?*
Gentiles, becauſe they properly pertain to Countries or Nations, Sects or Factions.

Q. *How many Perſons hath a Pronoun?*
A. Three.
Q. *How do you know the firſt Perſon?*
A. The firſt Perſon ſpeaketh of himſelf, as—*ego nos* we.
Q. *How do you know the ſecond Perſon?*
A. The ſecond Perſon is ſpoken to, as *tu* thou, *vos* ye
Q. *Of what Perſon is every Vocative Caſe?*
A. Of the ſecond Perſon.
Q. *How do you know the third Perſon?*
A. The third Perſon is ſpoken of, as *ille* he, *illi* they.
Q. *Of what Perſons are all Nouns, Pronouns and Participles?*
A. Of the third Perſon, except *ego*, *tu*, *nos* and *vos*.

Of a Verb.

Q. *What is a Verb?*
A. A Verb is a part of Speech, declined with Mood and Tenſe.
Q. *What doth a Verb betoken?*
A. A Verb betokeneth either to do, as *amo* I love; to ſuffer, as *amor* I am loved; or to be, as *ſum* I am.
Q. *How many kinds of Verbs are there?*
A. Two; Perſonals and Impersonals.
Q. *What Verbs are called Perſonals?*
A. Thoſe Verbs that have Perſons, as *amo*, *amas*, *amat*.
Q. *What Verbs are called Impersonals?*
A. Thoſe Verbs that have not Perſons as *tædet*, *pudet*, &c.
Q. *Hath a Verb Impersonal never a Perſon?*
A. Yes, it hath one Perſon only, and that is the third Perſon Singular; as *tædet* it irketh, *oportet* it behoveth.
Q. *How many kinds of Verbs Perſonals are there?*
A. Five; Active, Paſſive, Neuter, Deponent and Common.
Q. *How do you know a Verb Active?*
A. A Verb Active endeth in *o*, and betokeneth to do, as *amo* I love.

Q. H

Q. *How may a Verb Active be made a Verb Passive?*

A. By putting *r* to the Verb Active, as by putting *r* to the Active *amo*, is made the Passive Verb *amor*.

Q. *How do you know a Verb Passive?*

A. A Verb Passive endeth in *or*, and betokeneth to suffer; as *amor* I am loved.

Q. *How may a Verb Passive be made a Verb Active?*

A. By taking *r* from it; as by taking *r* from the Passive *amor*, is made the Active *amo*.

Q. *How do you know a Verb Neuter?*

A. A Verb Neuter endeth in *o* or *m*, and cannot take *r* to be made a Passive, as *curro* I run, *sum* I am.

Q. *What signification hath a Verb Neuter?*

A. Sometimes the Active signification, as *curro* I run; and sometimes the Passive signification, as *ægroto* I am sick.

Q. *What is the difference between a Verb Active and a Verb Neuter?*

A. A Verb Active always ends in *o*, and betokeneth to do, a Verb Neuter endeth in *o* or *m*, and hath sometimes the Active, and sometimes the Passive signification: A Verb Active may be made a Verb Passive, a Verb Neuter cannot.

Q. *How do you know a Verb Deponent?*

A. A Verb Deponent endeth in *r*, like a Verb Passive, as *loquor* I speak.

Q. *What signification hath a Verb Deponent?*

A. It hath either the Active signification, as *loquor* I speak; or Neuter, as *glorior* I boast.

Q. *How do you know a Verb Commune?*

A. A Verb Commune hath both the Active and Passive signification, as *osculor te* I kiss thee, which is the Active signification, and *osculor a te* I am kissed of thee, which is the Passive signification.

Q. *What is the difference between a Verb Passive, Deponent and Commune?*

A. A Verb Passive hath always the Passive signification; a Verb Deponent hath sometimes Active and some-

times Neuter signification; a Verb Commune ha
both Active and Passive signification; a Verb Passi
may be made a Verb Active; a Verb Deponent a
Commune cannot be turned into a Verb Active;
Verb Deponent and Commune have Gerunds a
Supines like a Verb Active; a Verb Passive ha
neither Gerunds nor Supines; a Verb Deponent a
Commune have more Participles than a Verb Passi
hath.

Of Moods.

Q. HOw many *Moods are there?*

A. Six; the Indicative, the Imperative, t
Optative, the Potential, the Subjunctive and the I
finitive.

Q. *How do you know the Indicative Mood?*

A. The Indicative Mood sheweth a Reason True
False; as *ego amo* I love; or else asketh a questio
as *amas tu* dost thou love?

Q. *How do you know the Imperative Mood?*

A. The Imperative biddeth or commandeth, as *ama*
love thou; *amato ille* let him love.

Q. *How do you know the Optative Mood?*

A. The Optative wisheth or desireth.

Q. *What are the Signs of the Optative Mood?*

A. Would God, I pray God, or God grant; as *utina*
amem, I pray God I love.

Q. *What hath the Optative Mood commonly joyn*
with it?

A. An Adverb of wishing.

Q. *How do you know the Potential Mood?*

A. The Potential Mood is known by these signs, ma
can, might, would, could, should or ought;
amem I may or can love, without an Adverb joyn
with him.

Q. *How do you know the Subjunctive Mood?*

A. T

A. The Subjunctive Mood hath evermore some Conjunction joyned with him, as *cum amarem*, when I loved.

Q. *Why is it called the Subjunctive Mood?*

A. Because it dependeth upon another Verb in the same Sentence, either going before or coming after, as *cum amarem, eram miser.*

Q. *How do you know the Infinitive Mood?*

A. The Infinitive Mood betokeneth to do, to suffer, or to be, and hath neither Number nor Person, nor Nominative Case.

Q. *By what Sign is the Infinitive Mood known?*

A. It is commonly known by this Sign *(to)* as *amare* to love.

Q. *When two Verbs come together without any Nominative Case between them, with this Sign* (to) *between them, what must the latter of them be?*

A. The latter of them must be the Infinitive Mood, as *cupio discere*, I desire to learn; *discere* is the latter of two Verbs, and *cupio* the former.

Of Gerunds.

Q. *From whence are Gerunds derived?*

A. From the Infinitive Mood of Verbs.

Q. *How many Gerunds are there?*

A. Three; which end in *di*, *do* and *dum*; as *amandi, amando, amandum.*

Q. *What signification have Gerunds?*

A. Both Active and Passive signification.

Q. *Give an example?*

A. *Amandi* of loving, Active signification, or of being loved, Passive signification, *amando* in loving or in being loved; *amandum* to love or to be loved.

Of

Of Supines.

Q. *From whence are Supines derived?*

A. From the Preterperfect Tenſe of Verbs.

Q. *How many Supines belong to Verbs?*

A. Two.

Q. *How do they end?*

A. The firſt Supine endeth in *um*, as *amatum*, the latter endeth in *u*, as *amatu*.

Q. *What ſignification have Supines?*

A. The firſt Supine hath the Active, and the latter hath the Paſſive ſignification, as *amatum* to love, *amatu* to be loved.

Q. *What is the difference between the two Supines?*

A. The firſt Supine ends in *um*, and hath the Active ſignification; the latter Supine ends in *u*, and hath the Paſſive ſignification: The firſt Supine is put after Verbs and Participles that betoken moving to a place; the latter Supine is put after Nouns Adjectives, and may be turned into the Infinitive Mood Paſſive.

Of Tenſes.

Q. *How many Tenſes or Times are there?*

A. Five; the Preſent Tenſe, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect, the Preterpluperfect, and the Future Tenſe.

Q. *How do you know the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. The Preſent Tenſe ſpeaketh of the time that now is, as *amo* I love.

Q. *What is the ſign of the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. Do, doſt, or doth.

Q. *How do you know the Preterimperfect Tenſe?*

A. The Preterimperfect Tenſe ſpeaketh of the time not perfectly paſt, as *amabam* I loved or did love.

Q. *What is the Sign of the Preterimperfect Tenſe?*

A. Did or didſt.

Q. *How do you know the Preterperfect Tenſe?*
A. The Preterperfect Tenſe ſpeaketh of the time perfectly paſt, as *amavi* I have loved.
Q. *What is the ſign of the Preterperfect Tenſe?*
A. Have, haſt or hath.
Q. *How do you know the Preterpluperfect Tenſe?*
A. The Preterpluperfect Tenſe ſpeaketh of the time more than perfectly paſt, as *amaveram* I had loved.
Q. *What is the Sign of the Preterpluperfect Tenſe?*
A. Had or hadſt.
Q. *How do you know the Future Tenſe?*
A. The Future Tenſe ſpeaketh of the time to come.
Q. *What is the Sign of the Future Tenſe?*
A. Shall or will, ſhalt or wilt.

Perſons.

Q. HOw many *Perſons pertain to Verbs?*
A. Three, in both Numbers.
Q. *Which be they?*
A. 1. 1. 2. 2. 3.
ing. *ego amo*, I love; *tu amas*, thou loveſt; *ille amat*,
3. 1. 1. 2.
he loveth. — Plur. *nos amamus*, we love; *vos amatis*,
2. 3. 3.
ye love; *illi amant*, they love.

Of Conjugations.

Q. HOw many *Conjugations have Verbs?*
A. Four Conjugations.
Q. *How do you know the firſt Conjugation?*
A. The firſt Conjugation hath *ā* long before *re* and *ris*, as *amāre*, *amāris*.
Q. *What do you mean by* ā *long before* re *and* ris?
A. When *ā* is pronounced long before *re* and *ris*.

Q. How

Q. *How do you know the ſecond Conjugation?*

A. The ſecond Conjugation hath ē long before *re* and *ris*, as *docēre*, *docēris*.

Q. *What do you mean by* ē *long before* re *and* ris?

A. When ē is pronounced long before *re* and *ris*.

Q. *How do you know the third Conjugation?*

A. The third Conjugation hath ĕ ſhort before *re* and *ris*, as *legĕre*, *legĕris*.

Q. *What do you mean by* ĕ *ſhort before* re *and* ris?

A. When ĕ is pronounced ſhort before *re* and *ris*.

Q. *How do you know the fourth Conjugation?*

A. The fourth Conjugation hath ī long before *re* and *ris*, as *audīre*, *audīris*.

Q. *What do you mean by* ī *long before* re *and* ris?

A. When ī is pronounced long before *re* and *ris*.

Q. *How are Verbs in* o *of the four Conjugations declined?*

A. After theſe Examples following.

1. *amo.*
2. *doceo.*
3. *lego.*
4. *audio.*

} is the Example of the { first / ſecond / third / fourth } Conjugation.

Q. *How do you decline* amo?

A. *Amo, amas, amavi, amare, amandi, amando, amandum, amatum, amatu, amans, amaturus,* — to love.

Q. *How do you decline* doceo?

A. *Doceo, doces, docui, docēre, docendi, docendo, docendum, doctum, doctu, docens, docturus* — to teach.

Q. *How do you decline* lego?

A. *Lego, legis, legi, legĕre, legendi, legendo, legendum, lectum, lectu, legens, lecturus* —— to read.

Q. *How do you decline* audio?

A. *Audio, audis, audivi, audire, audiendi, audiendo, audiendum, auditum, auditu, audiens, auditurus,* — to hear.

The Forming of Verbs.

Q. *What are the first Persons Singular of the first Conjugation throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

Present Ten.	Singulariter.	*amo*, I love.
Preterimp.		*amabam*, I loved, or did love.
Preterper.		*amavi*, I have loved.
Preterplu.		*amaveram*, I had loved.
Future Ten.		*amabo*, I shall or will love.

The Imperative wants the first Person Singular.

Present.	Singulariter.	*amem*, I may or can love.
Preterimp.		*amarem*, I might or could love.
Preterp.		*amaverim*, I might, would, should or ought to have loved.
Preterplu.		*amavissem*, I might, would, should or ought to had loved.
Future.		*amavero*, I may or can love hereafter.

Present and Preterim.	*amare*, to love.	Preterper. and Preterplu.	*amavisse*, to have or had loved.

uture Tense, *amaturum esse*, to love hereafter. Gerunds, *amandi* of loving; *amando* in loving, *amandum* to love. Supines, *amatum* to love, *amatu* to be loved, a Participle of the Present Tense, *amans* loving. A Participle of the Future in *rus*, *amaturus* to love, or about to love.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of the firſt Conjugation of a Verb in* o, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indicative.	Preſent T.	Singulariter.	*amas*, thou loveſt.
	Preterim.		*amabas*, thou didſt love.
	Preterper.		*amaviſti*, thou haſt loved.
	Preterplu.		*amaveras*, thou hadſt loved.
	Future T.		*amabis*, thou ſhalt or wilt love.

Imperative Mood Preſent Tenſe Singular, *ama*, *amato* love thou.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singulariter.	*ames*, thou maiſt, or canſt love.
	Preterim.		*amares*, thou mighteſt or could'ſt love.
	Preterper.		*amaveris*, thou might'ſt, would'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or oughteſt to have loved.
	Preterplu.		*amaviſſes*, thou might'ſt, would'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or oughteſt to have loved.
	Future T.		*amaveris*, thou maiſt or can love hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is the ſame, whatſoever Number or Perſon you form.

Q. *But why do you not form the Optative, and the Subjunctive, as well as the Potential?*

A. That is needleſs, becauſe the Optative, and the Subjunctive, are formed like the Potential, in all Tenſes, Numbers and Perſons, and do differ only in ſignification, and the ſign of the Mood.

2. Wh

2. *What are the third Persons Singular of the first Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all the Moods and Tenses?*

Present T.	Singulariter.	*amat*, he loveth.
Preterim.		*amabat*, he loved, or did love.
Preterper.		*amavit*, he hath loved.
Preterplu.		*amaverat*, he had loved.
Future T.		*amabit*, he shall, or will love.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *amet*, *amato*, love he, or let him love.

Present T.	Singulariter.	*amet*, he may, or can love.
Preterim.		*amaret*, he might, or could love.
Preterper.		*amaverit*, he might, would, should, or ought to have loved.
Preterplu.		*amavisset*, he might, would, should, or ought to had loved.
Future.		*amaverit*, he may, or can love hereafter.

2. *What are the first Persons Plural of the first Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

Present T.	Pluraliter.	*amamus*, we love.
Preterim.		*amabamus*, we loved, or did love.
Preterper.		*amavimus*, we have loved.
Preterplu.		*amaveramus*, we had loved.
Future		*amabimus*, we shall, or will love.

Impera-

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *amemus*, us love.

Potential Mood.
- Preſent T.
- Preterim.
- Preterper.
- Preterplu.
- Future

Pluraliter.
- *amemus*, we may, or can love.
- *amaremus*, we ought, or co love.
- *amaverimus*, we might, wou ſhould, or ought to ha loved.
- *amaviſſemus*, we might, wou ſhould, or ought to had lov
- *amaverimus*, we may, or can lo hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of the firſt Co jugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moo and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.
- Preſent T.
- Preterim.
- Preterper.
- Preterplu.
- Future

Pluraliter.
- *amatis*, ye love.
- *amabatis*, ye loved, or did love
- *amaviſtis*, ye have loved.
- *amaveratis*, ye had loved.
- *amabitis*, ye ſhall, or will love.

Imperative Mood Preſent Tenſe Plural, *amate*, *amato* love you.

Potential Mood.
- Preſent T.
- Preterim.
- Preterper.
- Preterpl.
- Future

Pluraliter.
- *ametis*, ye may, or can love.
- *amaretis*, ye might, or coul love.
- *amaveritis*, ye might, would ſhould, or ought to ha loved,
- *amaviſſetis*, ye might, would ſhould, or ought to had loved
- *amaveritis*, ye may, or can lov hereafter.

Q. *Wha*

Q. *What are the third Persons Plural of the first Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.

Present T.	Pluraliter.	*amant*, they love.
Preterim.		*amabant*, they loved or did love.
Preterper.		*amavêrunt*, *vel amavêre*, they have loved.
Preterplu.		*amaverant*, they had loved.
Future		*amabunt*, they shall or will love.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *ament*, *amanto*, love they, or let them love.

Potential Mood.

Present T.	Pluraliter.	*rament*, they may, or can love.
Preterim.		*amarent*, they might, or could love.
Preterper.		*amaverint*, they might, would, should, or ought to have loved.
Preterplu.		*amavissent*, they might, would, should, or ought to had loved.
Future		*amaverint*, they may, or can love hereafter.

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense, and Preterimperfect Tense, *amare*, to love, Preterperfect Tense, and Preterpluperfect Tense, *amavisse*, to have or had loved. Future Tense, *amaturum esse*, to love hereafter. Gerunds, *amandi*, of loving, *do*, in loving, *dum*, to love. Supines, *amatum*, to love, *tu*, to be loved. A Participle of the Present Tense, *amans*, loving; a Participle of the Future in *rus*, *amaturus*, to love, or about to love.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the first Persons Singular, of the second Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*doceo*, I teach.
	Preterim.		*docebam*, I taught, or did teach.
	Preterper.		*docui*, I have taught.
	Preterplu.		*docueram*, I had taught.
	Future.		*docebam*, I shall, or will teach.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	*doceam*, I may, or can teach.
	Preterim.		*docerem*, I might, or could teach.
	Prererper.		*docuerim*, I might, would, should or ought to have taught.
	Preterplu.		*docuissem*, I might, would, should, or ought to had taught.
	Future.		*docuero*, I may, or can teach hereafter.

Infi. M.	Pref. and Pretim.	*docere*, to teach.	Pretper. and Pretpl.	*docuisse*,	to have or had taught.

Future Tense, *doctūrum esse*, to teach hereafter. Gerunds, *docendi*, of teaching, *docendo*, in teaching, *docendum*, to teach. Supines, *doctum*, to teach, *doctu*, to be taught: A Participle of the Present Tense, *docens*, teaching, a Participle of the Future in *rus*, *doctūrus*, to teach, or about to teach.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of the ſecond Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*doces*, thou teacheſt.
	Preterim.		*docebas*, thou didſt teach.
	Preterper.		*docuiſti*, thou haſt taught.
	Preterplu.		*docueras*, thou hadſt taught.
	Future.		*docebis*, thou ſhalt or wilt teach.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *doce*, teach thou.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singulariter.	*doceas*, thou may'ſt, or canſt teach.
	Preterim.		*doceres*, thou might'ſt, or couldſt teach.
	Preterper.		*docueris*, thou might'ſt, would'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have taught.
	Preterplu.		*docuiſſes*, thou might'ſt, would'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to had taught.
	Future.		*docueris*, thou may'ſt, or can'ſt teach hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Singular of the ſecond Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes.*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*docet*, he teacheth.
	Preterim.		*docebat*, he did teach.
	Preterper.		*docuit*, he hath taught.
	Preterplu.		*docuerat*, he had taught.
	Future.		*docebit*, he ſhall, or will teach.

Impera-

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *doceat*, *docet*, let him teach.

Potential Mood. Singulariter.

Preſent T.	*doceat*, he may, or can teach.
Preterim.	*doceret*, he might, or could teach.
Preterper.	*docuerit*, he might, would, ſhould, or ought to have taught.
Preterplu.	*docuiſſet*, he might, would, ſhould, or ought to had taught.
Future.	*docuerit*, he may, or can teach hereafter.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Plural of the ſecond Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Plural.

Preſent T.	*docemus*, we teach.
Preterim.	*docebamus*, we did teach.
Preterper.	*docuimus*, we have taught.
Preterplu.	*docueramus*, we had taught.
Future.	*docebimus*, we ſhall, or will teach.

Potential Mood. Pluraliter.

Preſent T.	*doceamus*, we may, or can teach.
Preterim.	*doceremus*, we might, or could teach.
Preterper.	*docuerimus*, we might, would, ſhould, or ought to have taught.
Preterplu.	*docuiſſemus*, we might, would, ſhould, or ought to had taught.
Future.	*docuerimus*, we may, or can teach hereafter.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of the ſecond Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

Indicative Mood.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*docetis*, ye teach.
Preterim.		*docebatis*, ye did teach.
Preterper.		*docuiſtis*, ye have taught.
Preterplu.		*docueratis*, ye had taught.
Future.		*docebitis*, ye ſhall, or will teach.

Imperative Mood. Preſent Tenſe Plural, *docete*, *docetote*, teach ye.

Potential Mood.

Preſent T.	Pluraliter.	*doceatis*, ye may, or can teach.
Preterim.		*doceretis*, ye might, or could teach.
Preterper.		*docueritis*, ye might, would, ſhould, or ought to have taught.
Preterplu.		*docuiſſetis*, ye might, would, ſhould, or ought to had taught.
Future.		*docueritis*, ye may, or can teach hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Plural of the ſecond Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

Indicative Mood.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*docent*, they teach.
Preterim.		*docebant*. they did teach.
Preterper.		*docuêrunt*, *vel êre*, they have taught.
Preterplu.		*docuerant*, they had taught.
Future.		*docebunt*, they ſhall, or will teach.

Impera-

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *doceant*, *docea*
let them teach.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Pluraliter.	*doceant*, they may, or c teach.
	Preterim.		*docerent*, they might, or co teach.
	Preterper.		*docuerint*, they might, wo ſhould, or ought to h taught.
	Preterplu.		*docuiſſent*, they might, wo ſhould, or ought to taught.
	Future.		*docuerint*, they may, or teach hereafter.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Singular of the th Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Mo and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*lego*, I read.
	Preterim.		*legebam*, I did read.
	Preterper.		*legi*, I have read.
	Preterplu.		*legeram*, I had read.
	Future.		*legam*, I ſhall, or will read.

Imperative Mood wants the firſt Perſon Singular.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*legam*, I may, or can read.
	Preterim.		*legerem*, I might, or could r
	Preterper.		*legerim*, I might, would, ſho or ought to have read.
	Preterplu.		*legiſſem*, I might, would, ſho or ought to had read.
	Future.		*legero*, I may, or can read h after.

Inf. M. { Preſent. and Preteri. } *legere*, to read. { Preterp. and Preterpl. } *legiſſe*, to have, or had read.

Future Tenſe, *lecturum eſſe*, to read hereafter. Gerunds, *legendi* of reading, *legendo* in reading, *legendum* to read. Supines, *lectum* to read, *lectu* to be read: a Participle of the Preſent Tenſe, *legens* reading; a Participle of the Future in *rus*, *lecturus* to read, or about to read.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood. Singular.

Preſent T.	*legis*, thou readeſt.
Preterim.	*legebas*, thou didſt read.
Preterper.	*legiſti*, thou haſt read.
Preterplu.	*legeras*, thou hadſt read.
Future.	*leges*, thou ſhalt, or wilt read.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *lege*, *legito*, read thou.

Potential Mood. Singular.

Preſent T.	*legas*, thou may'ſt, or canſt read.
Preterim.	*legeres*, thou might'ſt, or could'ſt read.
Preterper.	*legeris*, thou might'ſt, would'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have read.
Preterplu.	*legiſſes*, thou might'ſt, would'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to had read.
Future.	*legeris*, thou may'ſt, or canſt read hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What are the third Persons Singular of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*legit*, he readeth.
	Preterim.		*legebat*, he did read.
	Preterper.		*legit*, he hath read.
	Preterplu.		*legerat*, he had read.
	Future.		*leget*, he shall, or will read.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Singular, *legat*, *legit* let him read.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*legat*, he may, or can read.
	Preterim.		*legeret*, he might, or could re
	Preterper.		*legerit*, he might, would, shou or ought to have read.
	Preterplu.		*legisset*, he might, would, shou or ought to had read.
	Future.		*legerit*, he may, or can re hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Plural of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*legimus*, we read.
	Preterim.		*legebamus*, we did read.
	Preterper.		*legimus*, we have read.
	Preterplu.		*legeramus*, we had read.
	Future.		*legemus*, we shall, or will rea

Impe

perative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *legamus*, let us read.

Preſent T.	Pluraliter.	*legamus*, we may, or can read.
Preterim.		*legeremus*, we might, or could read.
Preterper.		*legerimus*, we might, would, ſhould, or ought to have read.
Preterplu.		*legiſſemus*, we might, would, ſhould, or ought to had read.
Future.		*legerimus*, we may, or can read hereafter.

What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?

Preſent T.	Plural.	*legitis*, ye read.
Preterim.		*legebatis*, ye read.
Preterper.		*legiſtis*, ye have read.
Preterplu.		*legeratis*, ye had read.
Future.		*legetis*, ye ſhall, or will read.

perative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *legite*, *legitote*, ead ye.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*legatis*, ye may, or can read.
Preterim.		*legeretis*, ye might, or could read.
Preterper.		*legeritis*, ye might, would, ſhould, or ought to have read.
Preterplu.		*legiſſetis*, ye might, would, ſhould, or ought to had read.
Future.		*legeritis*, ye may, or can read hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Persons Plural of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*legunt*, they read.
	Preterim.		*legebant*, they did read.
	Preterper.		*legerunt, vel ere*, they have read.
	Preterplu.		*legerant*, they had read.
	Future.		*legent*, they shall, or will read.

Imperative Mood, *legant, legunto*, let them read.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*legant*, they may, or can read.
	Preterim.		*legerent*, they might, or could read.
	Preterper.		*legerint*, they might, would, should, or ought to have read.
	Preterplu.		*legissent*, they might, would, should, or ought to had read.
	Future.		*legerint*, they may, or can hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Singular of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*audio*, I hear.
	Preterim.		*audiebam*, I did hear.
	Preterper.		*audivi*, I have heard.
	Preterplu.		*audiveram*, I had heard.
	Future.		*audiam*, I shall, or will hear.

Imp

Imperative Mood wants the firſt perſon Singular.

Preſent T.	Singular.	*audiam*, I may, or can hear.
Preterim.		*audirem*, I might, or could hear.
Preterper.		*audiverim*, I might, would, ſhould, or ought to have heard.
Preterplu.		*audiviſſem*, I might, would, ſhould, or ought to had heard.
Future		*audivero*, I may, or can hear hereafter.

Preſ. and Preim. } *audire*, to hear. { Pretper. and Pretpl. } *audiviſſe*, { to have, or had heard.

ture, *auditurum eſſe*, to hear hereafter: Gerunds, *audiendi*, of hearing; *audiendo*, in hearing; *audiendum*, to hear: Supines, *auditum*, to hear; *auditu*, to be heard: A Participle of the Preſent Tenſe, *audiens*, hearing: A Participle of the Future in *rus*, *auditurus*, to hear, or about to hear.

What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?

Preſent T.	Singular.	*audis*, thou heareſt.
Preterim.		*audiebas*, thou didſt hear.
Preterper.		*audiviſti*, thou haſt heard.
Preterplu.		*audiveras*, thou hadſt heard.
Future.		*audies*, thou ſhalt, or wilt hear.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *audi*, au
hear thou.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singulariter. *audias*, thou may'ſt, or c hear.
	Preterim.	*audires*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt hear.
	Preterper.	*audiveris*, thou might'ſt, wo ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to heard.
	Preterplu.	*audiviſſes*, thou might would'ſt, ſhould'ſt, ought'ſt to had heard.
	Future.	*audiveris*, thou may'ſt, or c hear hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Singular of the fo Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all M and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singul. *audit*, he heareth.
	Preterim.	*audiebat*, he did hear.
	Preterper.	*audivit*, he hath heard.
	Preterplu.	*audiverat*, he had heard.
	Future.	*audiet*, he ſhall, or will hea

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *audiat*, au
let him hear.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular. *audiat*, he may, or can hear.
	Preterim.	*audiret*, he might, or could h
	Preterper.	*audiverit*, he might, wo ſhould, or ought to have h
	Preterplu.	*audiviſſet*, he might, wo ſhould, or ought to had he
	Future.	*audiverit*, he may, or can hereafter.

Q. W

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Plural of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*audimus*, we hear.
	Preterim.		*audiebamus*, we did hear.
	Preterper.		*audivimus*, we have heard.
	Preterplu.		*audiveramus*, we had heard.
	Future.		*audiemus*, we ſhall, or will hear.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *audiamus*, let us hear.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Pluraliter.	*audiamus*, we may, or can hear.
	Preterim.		*audiremus*, we might, or could hear.
	Preterper.		*audiverimus*, we might, would, ſhould, or ought to have heard.
	Preterplu.		*audiviſſemus*, we might, would, ſhould, or ought to had heard.
	Future.		*audiverimus*, we may, or can hear hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*auditis*, ye hear.
	Preterim.		*audiebatis*, ye did hear.
	Preterper.		*audiviſtis*, ye have heard.
	Preterplu.		*audiveratis*, ye had heard.
	Future.		*audietis*, ye ſhall, or will hear.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *audite*, *auditote*, hear, ye.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Pluraliter.	*audiatis*, ye may, or can hear.
	Preterim.		*audiretis*, ye might, or could hear.
	Preterper.		*audiveritis*, ye might, would ſhould, or ought to have heard.
	Preterplu.		*audiviſſetis*, ye might, would ſhould, or ought to had heard
	Future		*audiveritis*, ye may or can hear hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Plural of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent T.	Pluraliter.	*audiunt*, they hear.
	Preterim.		*audiebant*, they did hear.
	Preterper.		*audivêrunt*, *vel êre*, they have heard.
	Preterplu.		*audiverant*, they had heard.
	Future		*audient*, they ſhall, or will hear.

The Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *audiant*, *audiunto*, let them hear.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Pluraliter.	*audiant*, they may, or can hear.
	Preterim.		*audirent*, they might, or could hear.
	Preterper.		*audiverint*, they might, would ſhould, or ought to have heard.
	Preterplu.		*audiviſſent*, they might, would ſhould, or ought to had heard
	Future		*audiverint*, they may, or can hear hereafter.

Finis Verborum Activorum Formationis.

Q. *What*

Q. *What Verbs must we learn to decline, before we decline Verbs in* (or)?

A. We muſt learn to decline this Verb (*ſum*).

Q. *Why ſo?*

A. Becauſe Verbs in *or* have no Preterperfect Tenſes, nor Preterpluperfect Tenſes of the Indicative Mood; nor Preterperfect, nor Preterpluperfect, nor Future Tenſes of the Potential, Optative, Subjunctive, or Infinitive Moods of their own, but are ſupplied by the latter Supines, or rather by the Participle of the Preterperfect Tenſe, and the Verb *Sum*, in thoſe ſeveral Tenſes.

Q. *How do you decline the Verb* (Sum)?

A. *Sum, es, fui, eſſe, futurus.*

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Singular of* Sum *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*ſum*, I am.
	Preterim.		*eram*, I was.
	Preterper.		*fui*, I have been.
	Preterplu.		*fueram*, I had been.
	Future		*ero*, I ſhall, or will be.

Imperative Mood wants the firſt Perſon Singular.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*ſim*, I may, or can be.
	Preterim.		*eſſem*, I might, or could be.
	Preterper.		*fuerim*, I might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been.
	Preterplu.		*fuiſſem*, I might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been.
	Future		*fuero*, I may, or can be hereafter.

Infi. M. { Preſen. and Preter. } *eſſe*, to be. { Pretp. and Pretpl. } *fuiſſe*, { to have, or had been.

Future, *fore vel futurum eſſe*, to be hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of* ſu *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood. Singular.

Preſent T.	*es*, thou art.
Preterim.	*eras*, thou waſt.
Preterper.	*fuiſti*, thou haſt been.
Preterplu.	*fueras*, thou hadſt been.
Future.	*eris*, thou ſhalt, or wilt be.

Imperative Mood Preſent Tenſe Singular, *ſis, es, eſ* be thou.

Potential Mood. Singulariter.

Preſent T.	*ſis*, thou, may'ſt, or canſt be.
Preterim.	*eſſes*, thou might'ſt, or could be.
Preterper.	*fueris*, thou might'ſt, could ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to ha been.
Preterplu.	*fuiſſes*, thou might'ſt, could ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to h been.
Future.	*fueris*, thou may'ſt, or canſt hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Singular of* ſum, *throug out all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood. Singular.

Preſent T.	*eſt*, he is.
Preterim.	*erat*, he was.
Preterper.	*fuit*, he hath been.
Preterplu.	*fuerat*, he had been.
Future.	*erit*, he ſhall, or will be.

Imperative Mood Preſent Tenſe Singular, *ſit, eſto*, be h

Potenti

Potential Mood. Singulariter.

Preſent T.	*ſit*, he may, or can be.
Preterim.	*eſſet*, he might, or could be.
Preterper.	*fuerit*, he might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been.
Preterplu.	*fuiſſet*, he might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been.
Future.	*fuerit*, he may, or can be hereafter.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Plural of* ſum, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood. Plural.

Preſent T.	*ſumus*, we are.
Preterim.	*eramus*, we were.
Preterper.	*fuimus*, we have been.
Preterplu.	*fueramus*, we had been.
Future.	*erimus*, we ſhall, or will be.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *ſimus*, be we.

Potential Mood. Pluraliter.

Preſent T.	*ſimus*, we may, or can be.
Preterim.	*eſſemus*, we might, or could be.
Preterper.	*fuerimus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been.
Preterplu.	*fuiſſemus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been.
Future.	*fuerimus*, we may, or can be hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of* ſum, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood. Plural.

Preſent T.	*ſitis*, ye may, or can be.
Preterim.	*eſſetis*, ye might, or could be.
Preterper.	*fuiſtis*, ye have been.
Preterplu.	*fueratis*, ye had been.
Future.	*eritis*, ye ſhall, or will be.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *ſitis*, *eſte*, *eſtote*, be ye.

Potential

Potentiai Mood.	Present. T.	Pluraliter.	*sitis*, ye may, or can be.
	Preterim.		*essetis*, ye might, or could be.
	Preterper.		*fueritis*, ye might, could, should, or ought to have been.
	Preterplu.		*fuissetis*, ye might, would, should, or ought to had been.
	Future		*fueritis*, ye may, or can be hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Persons Plural of* Sum, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*sunt*, they are.
	Preterim.		*erant*, they were.
	Preterper.		*fuêrunt, vel fuêre*, they have been.
	Preterplu.		*fuerant*, they had been.
	Future		*erunt*, they shall, or will be.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *sint*, *sunto*, be they.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter.	*sint*, they may, or can be.
	Preterim.		*essent*, they might, or could be.
	Preterper.		*fuerint*, they might, could, should, or ought to have been.
	Preterplu.		*fuissent*, they might, could, should, or ought to had been.
	Future		*fuerint*, they may, or can be hereafter.

Of

Of Verbs in *Or.*

Q. HOw many *Conjugations of Verbs in* or *be there?*

A. Four.

Q. *What is the Example of the first Conjugation of Verbs in* or?

A. *Amor*, I am loved.

Q. *How is* Amor *declined?*

A. *Amor, amaris, vel amare, amatus ſum vel fui, amari, amatus, amandus*, to be loved.

Q. *What is the Example of the ſecond Conjugation of Verbs in* or?

A. *Doceor*, I am taught.

Q. *How is* doceor *declined?*

A. *Doceor, doceris, vel docêre, doctus ſum vel fui, doceri, doctus, docendus*, to be taught.

Q. *What is the Example of the third Conjugation of Verbs in* or?

A. *Legor*, I am read.

Q. *How do you decline* legor?

A. *Legor, legeris, vel legere, lectus ſum vel fui, legi, lectus, legendus*, to be read.

Q. *What is the Example of the fourth Conjugation of Verbs in* or?

A. *Audior*, I am heard.

Q. *How do you decline* audior?

A. *Audior, audiris, vel audire, auditus ſum vel fui, audiri, auditus, audiendus*, to be heard.

The Forming of Verbs in Or.

Q. WHat *are the first Persons Singular of Verbs* or *of the first Conjugation, throughout* (*Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood. (Singular.)

- Present T. — *amor*, I am loved.
- Preterim. — *amabar*, I was loved.
- Preterper. — *amatus sum vel fui*, I have b loved.
- Preterplu. — *amatus eram vel fueram*, I h been loved.
- Future — *amabor*, I shall, or will be lo

Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood. (Singulariter.)

- Present T. — *amer*, I may, or can be loved
- Preterim. — *amarer*, I might, or could loved.
- Preterper. — *amatus sim vel fuerim*, I mig could, should, or ought have been loved.
- Preterplu. — *amatus essem vel fuissem*, might, could, should, or ou to had been loved.
- Future — *amatus ero vel fuero*, I may can be loved hereafter.

Pres. and Prim. *amari*, to be loved. Prep. and Prp!. *amatum esse vel fuisse*, to have, or had been lo

Future, *amatum iri*, *vel amandum esse*, to be loved h after; a Participle of the Present Tense, *amatus*, lov a Participle of the Future in *dus*, *amandus*, to be lo

Q. W

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of Verbs in* or *of the firſt Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Singulariter.

Preſent T.	*amaris vel amare*, thou art loved.
Preterim.	*amabaris vel amabare*, thou waſt loved.
Preterper.	*amatus es vel fuiſti*, thou haſt been loved.
Preterplu.	*amatus eras vel fueras*, thou hadſt been loved.
Future	*amaberis vel amabere*, thou ſhalt, or wilt be loved.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *amare, amator*, be thou loved.

Subjunct. Mood. Singulariter.

Preſent T.	*ameris vel amere*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be loved.
Preterim.	*amereris vel amarere*, thou might'ſt, or could'ſt be loved.
Preterper.	*amatus ſis vel fueris*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have been loved.
Preterplu.	*amatus eſſes vel fuiſſes*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to had been loved.
Future.	*amatus eris vel fueris*, thou may'ſt, or can'ſt be loved hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the third Perſons Singular of Verbs in* o *of the firſt Conjugation, throughout all Moods a Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.

Preſent T.	*amatur*, he is loved.
Preterim.	*amabatur*, he was loved.
Preterper.	*amatus eſt vel fuit*, he hath be loved.
Preterplu.	*amatus erat, vel fuerat*, he h been loved.
Future	*amabitur*, he ſhall, or will loved.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *ametur*, *am tor*, let him be loved.

Potential Mood.

Preſent T.	*ametur*, he may, or can be lov
Preterim.	*amaretur*, he might, or could loved.
Preterper.	*amatus ſit vel fuerit*, he mig could, ſhould, or ought have been loved.
Preterplu.	*amatus eſſet vel fuiſſet*, might, could, ſhould, or ou to had been loved.
Future	*amatus erit vel fuerit*, he m or can be loved hereafter.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Plural of Verbs in of the firſt Conjugation, throughout all Moods Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.

Preſent T.	*amamur*, we are loved.
Preterim.	*amabamur*, we were loved.
Preterper.	*amati ſumus vel fuimus*, have been loved.
Preterplu.	*amati eramus vel fueramus*, had been loved.
Future	*amabimur*, we ſhall, or will loved.

Imper

perative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *amemur*, let us be loved.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*amemur*, we may, or can be loved.
Preterim.		*amaremur*, we might, or could be loved.
Preterper.		*amati ſimus vel fuerimus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been loved.
Preterplu.		*amati eſſemus vel fuiſſemus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been loved.
Future		*amati erimus vel fuerimus*, we may, or can be loved hereafter.

What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of Verbs in or. *of the firſt Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

Preſent T.	Plural.	*amamini*, ye are loved.
Preterim.		*amabamini*, ye were loved.
Preterper.		*amati eſtis vel fuiſtis*, ye have been loved.
Preterplu.		*amati eratis vel fueratis*, ye had been loved.
Future		*amabimini*, ye ſhall, or will be loved.

perative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *amemini*, *amaminor*, be ye loved.

Potential

Potential Mood.

- Preſent T. — *amemini*, ye may, or can be lo
- Preterim. — *amaremini*, ye might, or c be loved.
- Preterper. — *amati ſitis vel fueritis*, ye m could, ſhould, or ought have been loved.
- Preterplu. — *amati eſſetis vel fuiſſetis*, might, could, ſhould, or o to had been loved.
- Future — *amati eritis vel fuerttis*, ye or can be loved hereafter.

Pluraliter.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Plural of Verbs in* or *of first Conjugation throughout all Moods and Tenſes*

A.

Indic. Mood.

- Preſent T. — *amantur*, they are loved.
- Preterim. — *amabantur*, they were love
- Preterper. — *amati ſunt*, *fuêrunt*, *vel fu* they have been loved.
- Preterplu. — *amati erant vel fuerant*, had been loved.
- Future — *amabuntur*, they ſhall, or wi loved.

Pluraliter.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *amentur*, *am tor*, let them be loved.

Potential Mood.

- Preſent T. — *amentur*, they may, or ca loved.
- Preterim. — *amarentur*, they might, or c be loved.
- Preterper. — *amati ſint vel fuerint*, might, could, ſhould, or ou to have been loved.
- Preterplu. — *amati eſſent vel fuiſſent*, might, could, ſhould, or ou to had been loved.
- Future — *amati erunt vel fuerint*, may, or can be loved herea

Pluraliter.

Q. W

Q. *What are the first Persons Singular of Verbs in* or *of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*doceor*, I am taught.
	Preterim.		*docebar*, I was taught.
	Preterper.		*doctus sum vel fui*, I have been taught.
	Preterplu.		*doctus eram vel fueram*, I had been taught.
	Future		*docebor*, I shall, or will be taught.

Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	*docear*, I may, or can be taught.
	Preterim.		*docerer*, I might or could be taught.
	Preterper.		*doctus sim vel fuerim*, I might, could, should, or ought to have been taught.
	Preterplu.		*doctus essem vel fuissem*, I might, could, should, or ought to had been taught.
	Future		*doctus ero vel fuero*, I may or can be taught hereafter.

Inf. M.	Pres. and Prim.	*docere*,	to be taught.	Pretp. and Prepl.	*doctum esse vel fuisse*, to have or had been taught.

Future, *doctum iri vel docendum esse*, to be taught hereafter; a Participle of the Preter Tense, *doctus*, taught; a Participle of the Future in *dus*, *docendus*, to be taught.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of Verbs* or, *of the ſecond Conjugation throughout all Moo and Tenſes?*

A.

Indicative Mood.	Preſent T.	Singulariter.	*doceris vel docere*, thou taught.
	Preterim.		*docebaris vel docebare*, thou w taught.
	Preterper.		*doctus es vel fuiſti*, thou h been taught.
	Preterplu.		*doctus eras vel fueras*, thou had been taught.
	Future		*doceberis vel docebere*, thou ſha or wilt be taught.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *docere*, *docet* be thou taught.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singulariter.	*docearis vel doceare*, thou may or canſt be taught.
	Preterim.		*docereris vel docerere*, th might'ſt, or could'ſt taught.
	Preterper.		*doctus ſis vel fueris*, th might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould or ought'ſt to have be taught.
	Preterplu.		*doctus eſſes vel fuiſſes*, th might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould or ought'ſt to had be taught.
	Future		*doctus eris vel fueris*, th may'ſt or canſt be taug hereafter.

Q. Wh

Q. *What are the third Persons Singular of Verbs in* or *of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*docetur*,	he is taught.
	Preterim.		*docebatur*,	he was taught.
	Preterper.		*doctus est vel fuit*,	he hath been taught.
	Preterplu.		*doctus erat vel fuerat*,	he had been taught.
	Future		*docebitur*,	he shall, or will be taught.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *doceatur, docetor*, let him be taught.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*doceatur*,	he may, or can be taught.
	Preterim.		*doceretur*,	he might, or could be taught.
	Preterper.		*doctus sit vel fuerit*,	he might, could, should, or ought to have been taught.
	Preterplu.		*doctus esset vel fuisset*,	he might, could, should, or ought to had been taught.
	Future		*doctus erit vel fuerit*,	he may, or can be taught hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Plural of Verbs in* or *of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*docemur*,	we are taught.
	Preterim.		*docebamur*,	we were taught.
	Preterper.		*docti sumus vel fuimus*,	we have been taught.
	Preterplu.		*docti eramus vel fueramus*,	we had been taught.
	Future		*docebimur*,	we shall, or will be taught.

The

The Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *doceamur* let us be taught.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Pluraliter.	*doceamur*, we may, or can be taught.
	Preterim.		*doceremur*, we might, or could be taught.
	Preterper.		*docti ſimus vel fuerimus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been taught.
	Preterplu.		*docti eſſemus vel fuiſſemus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been taught.
	Future		*docti erimus vel fuerimus*, we may, or can be taught hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of Verbs in of the ſecond Conjugation, throughout all Moods a Tenſes?*

A.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Pluraliter.	*docemini*, ye are taught.
	Preterim.		*docebamini*, ye were taught.
	Preterper.		*docti eſtis vel fuiſtis*, ye have been taught.
	Preterplu.		*docti eratis vel fueratis*, ye had been taught.
	Future		*docebimini*, ye ſhall, or will be taught.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *docemini, doceminor*, be ye taught.

Potenti

Preſent T.	Pluraliter	*doceamini*, ye may, or can be taught.
Preterim.		*doceremini*, ye might, or could be taught.
Preterper.		*docti ſitis vel fueritis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been taught.
Preterplu.		*docti eſſetis vel fuiſſetis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been taught.
Future		*docti eritis vel fueritis*, ye may, or can be taught hereafter.

What are the third Perſons Plural of Verbs in or *of the ſecond Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

Preſent T.	Pluraliter.	*docentur*, they are taught.
Preterim.		*docebantur*, they were taught.
Preterper.		*docti ſunt fuêrunt vel fuêre*, they have been taught.
Preterplu.		*docti erant vel fuerant*, they had been taught.
Future		*docebuntur*, they ſhall, or will be taught.

perative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *doceantur*, *do-centur*, let them be taught.

Poten-

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter	*doceantur*, they may, or c taught.
	Preterim.		*docerentur*, they might, or c be taught.
	Preterper.		*docti sint vel fuerint*, might, could, should, or c to have been taught.
	Preterplu.		*docti essent vel fuissent*, might, could, should, or c to had been taught.
	Future		*docti erunt vel fuerint*, may, or can be taught after.

Q. *What are the first Persons Singular of Ver* or *of the third Conjugation, throughout all Mood Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singuli	*legor*, I am read.
	Preterim.		*legebar*, I was read.
	Preterper.		*lectus sum vel fui*, I have read.
	Preterplu.		*lectus eram vel fueram*, been read.
	Future.		*legar*, I shall, or will be re

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Sing

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	*legar*, I may, or can be r
	Preterim.		*legerer*, I might, or cou read.
	Preterper.		*lectus sim vel fuerim*, I could, should, or ou have been read.
	Preterplu.		*lectus essem vel fuissem*, I could, should, or ou had been read.
	Future.		*lectus ero vel fuero*, I m can be read hereafter.

Presen. and Pretim. *legi*, to be read. Pret. and Prpl. *lectum esse, vel fuisse*. to have, or had been read.

Future, *lectum iri, vel legendum esse*, to be read hereafter; a Participle of the Preterperfect Tense, *lectus*, read; a Participle of the Future in *dus*, *legendus*, to be read.

Q. *What are the second Persons Singular of Verbs in* or, *of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indicative Mood: Present T.	Singular.	*legeris vel legere*, thou art read.
Preterim.		*legebaris vel legebare*, thou wast read.
Preterper.		*lectus es vel fuisti*, thou hast been read.
Preterplu.		*lectus eras vel fueras*, thou hadst been read.
Future		*legêris vel legêre*, thou shalt, or wilt be read.

The Imperative Mood Present Tense Singular, *legere, legitor*, be thou read.

Present T.	Singular:	*legaris vel legare*, thou mayst, or canst be read.
Preterim.		*legereris vel legerere*, thou might'st, or could'st be read.
Preterper.		*lectus sis vel fueris*, thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to have been read.
Preterplu.		*lectus esses vel fuisses*, thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to had been read.
Future		*lectus eris vel fueris*, thou may'st, or canst be read hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Persons Singular of Ver in* or *of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moo and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*legitur*, he is read.
	Preterim.		*legebatur*, he was read.
	Preterper.		*lectus est vel fuit*, he hath be read.
	Preterplu.		*lectus erat vel fuerat*, he h been read.
	Future		*legetur*, he shall, or will be re

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *legatur*, *legi* let him read.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*legatur*, he may, or can be re
	Preterim.		*legeretur*, he might, or could read.
	Preterper.		*lectus sit vel fuerit*, he m could, should, or ought have been read.
	Preterplu.		*lectus esset vel fuisset*, he m could, should, or ough had been read.
	Puture		*lectus erit vel fuerit*, he m can be read hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Plural of Verbs of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*legimur*, we are read.
	Preterim.		*legebamur*, we were read
	Preterper.		*lecti sumus vel fuimus*, we been read.
	Preterplu.		*lecti eramus vel fueramus* had been read.
	Future		*legemur*, we shall, or will be

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *legamur*, let us be read.

Potential Mood. Plural.

Preſent T.	*legamur*, we may, or can be read.
Preterim.	*legeremur*, we might, or could be read.
Preterper.	*lecti ſimus vel fuerimus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been read.
Preterplu.	*lecti eſſemus vel fuiſſemus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been read.
Future	*lecti erimus vel fuerimus*, we may, or can be read hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of Verbs in* or *of the ſecond Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indicative Mood. Plural.

Preſent T.	*legimini*, ye are read.
Preterim.	*legebamini*, ye were read.
Preterper.	*lecti eſtis vel fuiſtis*, ye have been read.
Preterplu.	*lecti eratis vel fueratis*, ye had been read.
Future.	*legemini*, ye ſhall, or will be read.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe, Plural, *legimini*, *legi minor*, be ye read.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*legamini*,	ye may, or can read.
	Preterim.		*legeremini*,	ye might, or could be read.
	Preterper.		*lecti ſitis vel fueritis*,	ye might, could, ſhould, or ought have been read.
	Preterplu.		*lecti eſſetis vel fuiſſetis*,	might, could, ſhould, ought to had been read.
	Future		*lecti eritis vel fueritis*	may, or can be read hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Plural of Verbs of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods Tenſes?*

A.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*leguntur*,	they are read.
	Preterim.		*legebantur*,	they were read.
	Preterper.		*lecti ſunt, fuerunt vel fuere*,	have been read.
	Preterplu.		*lecti erant vel fuerant*,	they been read.
	Future		*legentur*,	they ſhall, or will read.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *legantur*, *leguntor*, let them be read.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*legantur*, they may, or can be read.
	Preterim.		*legerentur*, they might, or could be read.
	Preterper.		*lecti sint vel fuerint*, they might, could, should, or ought to have been read.
	Preterplu:		*lecti essent vel fuissent*, they might, could, should, or ought to had been read.
	Future		*lecti erunt vel fuerint*, they may, or can be read hereafter.

What are the first Persons Singular of Verbs in or *of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

Present T.	Singular.	*audior*, I am heard.
Preterim.		*audiebar*, I was heard.
Preterper.		*auditus sum vel fui*, I have been heard.
Preterplu.		*auditus eram vel fueram*, I had been heard.
Future		*audiar*, I shall, or will be heard.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood. Singular.

Present T.	*audiar*, I may, or can be hea
Preterim.	*audirer*, I might, or could heard.
Preterper.	*auditus ſim vel fuerim*, I migh could, ſhould, or ought have been heard.
Preterplu.	*auditus eſſem vel fuiſſem*, might, could, ſhould, or ou to had been heard.
Future	*auditus ero vel fuero*, I may, can be heard hereafter.

Infin. M.

Pref. and Prim.	*audiri*,	to be heard.	Prep. and Prpl.	*auditum eſſe vel fuiſſe*,	to have or had been h

Future Tenſe, *auditum iri vel audiendum eſſe*, t heard hereafter; a Participle of the Preterperfect T *auditus*, heard; a Participle of the Future in *audiendus*, to be heard.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of Verbs of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Singular.

Preſent.	*audiris vel audire*, thou heard.
Preterimp.	*audiebaris vel audiebare*, waſt heard.
Preterp.	*auditus es vel fuiſti*, thou been heard.
Preterplu.	*auditus eras vel fueras*, hadſt been heard.
Future	*audieris vel audiere*, thou or wilt be heard.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *audire, auditor*, be thou heard.

Potential Mood. Singular.

- Preſent T. — *audiaris vel audiare*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be heard.
- Preterim. — *audireris vel audirere*, thou might'ſt, or could'ſt be heard.
- Preterper. — *auditus ſis vel fueris*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have been heard.
- Preterplu. — *auditus eſſes vel fuiſſes*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to had been heard.
- Future T. — *auditus eris vel fueris*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be heard hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Singular of Verbs in* or *of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Singular.

- Preſent T. — *auditur*, he is heard.
- Preterim. — *audiebatur*, he was heard.
- Preterper. — *auditus eſt vel fuit*, he hath been heard.
- Preterplu. — *auditus erat vel fuerat*, he had been heard.
- Future — *audietur*, he ſhall, or will be heard.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *audiatur*; *auditor*, let him be heard.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*audiatur*, he may, or can be heard.
	Preterim.		*audiretur*, he might, or could be heard.
	Preterper.		*auditus ſit, vel fuerit*, he might could, ſhould, or ought have been heard.
	Preterplu.		*auditus eſſet vel fuiſſet*, might, could, ſhould, ought to had been heard.
	Future		*auditus erit vel fuerit*, may, or can be heard hereafter.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Plural of Verbs in* or *the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*audimur*, we are heard.
	Preterim.		*audiebamur*, we were heard.
	Preterper.		*auditi ſumus vel fuimus*, have been heard.
	Preterplu.		*auditi eramus vel fueramus*, had been heard.
	Future		*audiemur*, we ſhall, or will heard.

Imper

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *audiamur*, let us be heard.

Potential Mood. Plural.

- Preſent T. — *audiamur*, we may, or can be heard.
- Preterim. — *audiremur*, we might, or could be heard.
- Preterper. — *auditi ſimus vel fuerimus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been heard.
- Preterplu. — *auditi eſſemus vel fuiſſemus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been heard.
- Future — *auditi erimus vel fuerimus*, we may, or can be heard hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of Verbs in* or *of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Plural.

- Preſent T. — *audimini*, ye are heard.
- Preterim. — *audiebamini*, ye were heard.
- Preterper. — *auditi eſtis vel fuiſtis*, ye have been heard.
- Preterplu. — *auditi eratis vel fueratis*, ye had been heard.
- Future — *audiemini*, ye ſhall, or will be heard.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *audimini*, au *minor*, be ye heard.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*audiamini*, ye may, or can heard.
	Preterim.		*audiremini*, ye might, or co be heard.
	Preterper.		*auditi ſitis vel fueritis*, might, could, ſhould, or ou to have been heard.
	Preterplu.		*auditi eſſetis vel fuiſſetis*, might, could, ſhould, or ou to had been heard.
	Future		*auditi eritis vel fueritis*, may, or can be heard h after.

Potential Mood.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Plural of Verbs in of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*audiuntur*, they are heard.
	Preterim.		*audiebantur*, they were hea
	Preterper.		*auditi ſunt fuerunt vel* they have been heard.
	Preterplu.		*auditi erant vel fuerant*, had been heard.
	Future		*audientur*, they ſhall, or wil heard.

The Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *audiant audiuntur*, let them be heard.

Poten

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Plural. *audiantur*, they may, or can be heard.
	Preterim.	*audirentur*, they might, or could be heard.
	Preterper.	*auditi ſint vel fuerint*, they might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been heard.
	Preterplu.	*auditi eſſent vel fuiſſent*, they might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been heard.
	Future	*auditi erunt vel fuerint*, they may, or can be heard hereafter.

Q. *Why are ſome Verbs called irregular Verbs?*

A. Becauſe they differ from Verbs of the four Conjugations in their declining.

Q. *How many of thoſe irregular Verbs are there?*

A. Eight; *poſſum, volo, nolo, malo, edo, fio, fero,* and *feror.*

Q. *How is* poſſum *declined?*

A. *Poſſum, potes, potui, poſſe, potens,* to be able.

Q. *How is* volo *declined?*

A. *Volo, vis, volui, velle, volendi, do, dum, ſupinis caret, volens,* to be willing.

Q. *How is* nolo *declined?*

A. *Nolo, nonvis, nolui, nolle, nolendi, do, dum, ſupinis caret, nolens,* to be unwilling.

Q. *How is* malo *declined?*

A. *Malo, mavis, malui, malle, malendi, do, dum, ſupinis caret, malens,* to be more willing.

Q. *How is* edo *declined?*

A. *Edo, edis, vel es, edi, edere vel eſſe, edendi, do, dum, eſum, eſu, vel eſtum eſtu, edens, eſurus, vel eſturus,* to eat.

Q. *How is* fio *declined?*

A. *Fio, fis, factus ſum vel fui, fieri, factus, faciendus,* to be made or done.

Q. *How*

Q. *How is* fero *declined?*

A. *Fero, fers, tuli, ferre, ferendi, do, dum, latum, latu ferens, laturus,* to bear or ſuffer.

Q. *How is* feror *declined?*

A. *Feror, ferris vel ferre, latus ſum vel fui, ferri, latu ferendus,* to be born or ſuffered.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Singular of* poſſum *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singul.	*poſſum*, I am able.
	Preterim.		*poteram*, I was able.
	Preterper.		*potui*, I have been able.
	Preterplu.		*potueram*, I had been able.
	Future		*potero*, I ſhall, or will be able.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singularſter.	*poſſum*, I may, or can be able.
	Preterim.		*poſſem*, I might, or could be able.
	Preterper.		*potuerim*, I might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been able.
	Preterplu.		*potuiſſem*, I might, could ſhould, or ought to had been able.
	Future		*potuero*, I may, or can be able hereafer.

Inf. M.	Preſ. and Preim.	*poſſe*,	to be able.	Pretp. and Pretpl.	*potuiſſe*,	to have, or had been able.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of* poſſum, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.

Preſent T.	Singular.	*potes*, thou art able.
Preterim.		*poteras*, thou waſt able.
Preterper.		*potuiſti*, thou haſt been able.
Preterplu.		*potueras*, thou hadſt been able.
Future		*poteris*, thou ſhalt, or wilt be able.

Potential Mood.

Preſent T.	Singular.	*poſſis*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be able.
Preterim.		*poſſes*, thou might'ſt, or could'ſt be able.
Preterper.		*potueris*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have been able.
Preterplu.		*potuiſſes*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to had been able.
Future		*poueris*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be able hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Singular of* poſſum, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.

Preſent T.	Singular.	*potest*, he is able.
Preterim.		*poterat*, he was able.
Preterper.		*potuit*, he hath been able.
Preterplu.		*potuerat*, he had been able.
Future		*poterit*, he ſhall, or will be able.

Potential

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*possit*, he may, or can be able.
	Preterim.		*posset*, he might, or could be able.
	Preterper.		*potuerit*, he might, could, should or ought to have been able.
	Preterplu.		*potuisset*, he might, could, should, or ought to had been able.
	Future		*potuerit*, he may, or can be able hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Plural of* Possum *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*possumus*, we are able.
	Preterim.		*poteramus*, we were able.
	Preterper.		*potuimus*, we have been able.
	Preterplu.		*potuerāmus*, we had been able.
	Future		*potuerimus*, we shall, or will be able.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*possimus*, we may, or can be able.
	Preterim.		*possemus*, we might, or could be able.
	Preterper.		*potuerimus*, we might, could, should, or ought to have been able.
	Preterplu.		*potuissemus*, we might, could, should, or ought to had been able.
	Future		*potuerimus*, we may, or can be able hereafter.

Q. W

Q. *What are the second Persons Plural of* Possum, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.

Present T.	Plural.	*potestis*, ye are able.
Preterim.		*poteratis*, ye were able.
Preterper.		*potuistis*, ye have been able.
Preterpl.		*potueratis*, ye had been able.
Future		*poteritis*, ye shall, or will be able.

Potential Mood.

Present T.	Plural.	*possitis*, ye may, or can be able.
Preterim.		*possetis*, ye might, or could be able.
Preterper.		*potueritis*, ye might, could, should, or ought to have been able.
Preterplu.		*potuissetis*, ye might, could, should, or ought to had been able.
Future		*potueritis*, ye may, or can be able hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Persons Plural of* Possum, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.

Present T.	Plural.	*possunt*, they are able.
Preterim.		*poterant*, they were able.
Preterper.		*potuerunt, vel ere*, they have been able.
Preterplu.		*potuerant*, they had been able.
Future		*poterunt*, they shall, or will be able.

Poten-

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*possint*, they may, or can be abl
	Preterim.		*possent*, they might, or could b able.
	Preterper.		*potuerint*, they might, coul should, or ought to have b able.
	Preterplu.		*potuissent*, they might, cou should, or ought to had b able.
	Future		*potuerint*, they may, or can b able hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Singular of* Volo, *throug out all Moods and Tenses?*

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*volo*, I am willing.
	Preterim.		*volebam*, I was willing.
	Preterper.		*volui*, I have been willing.
	Preterplu.		*voluieram*, I had been willing
	Future		*volam*, I shall, or will be will

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*velim*, I may, or can be will
	Preterim.		*vellem*, I might, or could willing.
	Preterper.		*voluerim*, I might, could, sho or ought to have been wil
	Preterplu.		*voluissem*, I might, could, sho or ought to had been wil
	Future		*voluero*, I may, or can be wi hereafter.

Q. W

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of* Volo' *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

Preſent T.	Singular.	*vis*, thou art willing.
Preterim.		*volebas*, thou waſt willing.
Preterper.		*voluiſti*, thou haſt been willing.
Preterplu.		*volueras*, thou hadſt been willing.
Future		*voles*, thou ſhalt, or wilt be willing.

Preſent T.	Singular.	*velis*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be willing.
Preterim.		*velles*, thou might'ſt, or could'ſt be willing.
Preterper.		*volueris*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have been willing.
Preterplu.		*voluiſſes*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to had been willing.
Future		*volueris*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be willing hereafter.

Preſen. and Preim. *velle*, to be willing. Pretp. and Prepl. *voluiſſe*, to have, or had been willing.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Singular of* Volo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

Preſent T.	Singular.	*vult*, he is willing.
Preterim.		*volebat*, he was willing.
Preterper.		*voluit*, he hath been willing.
Preterplu.		*voluerit*, he had been willing.
Future.		*volet*, he ſhall, or will be willing.

Poten-

Potential Mood. — Plural.

- Preſent T. — *velit*, he may, or can willing.
- Preterim. — *vellet*, he might, or could willing.
- Preterper. — *voluerit*, he might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been willing.
- Preterplu. — *voluiſſet*, he might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been willing.
- Future — *voluerit*, he may, or can willing hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Plural of* Volo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood. — Plural.

- Preſent T. — *volumus*, we are willing.
- Preterim. — *volebamus*, we were willing.
- Preterper. — *voluimus*, we have been willing.
- Preterplu. — *voluerāmus*, we had been willing.
- Future — *volemus*, we ſhall, or will be willing.

Potential Mood. — Plural.

- Preſent T. — *velimus*, we may, or can willing.
- Preterim. — *vellemus*, we might, or could willing.
- Preterper. — *voluerimus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been willing.
- Preterplu. — *voluiſſemus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been willing.
- Future — *voluerimus*, we may, or can willing hereafter.

Q. W

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of* Volo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*vultis*, ye are willing.
Preterim.		*volebatis*, ye were willing.
Preterper.		*voluſtis*, ye have been willing.
Preterplu.		*volueratis*, ye had been willing.
Future		*voletis*, ye ſhall, or will be willing.

Indic. Mood.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*velitis*, ye may, or can be willing.
Preterim.		*velletis*, ye might, or could be willing.
Preterper.		*volueritis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been willing.
Preterplu.		*voluiſſetis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been willing.
Future		*volueritis*, ye may, or can be willing hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Plural of* Volo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*volunt*, they are willing.
Preterim.		*volebant*, they were willing.
Preterper.		*voluerunt vel voluere*, they have been willing.
Preterplu.		*voluerant*, they had been willing.
Future		*volent*, they ſhall, or will be willing.

Potential

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*velint*, they may, or can be willing.
	Preterim.		*vellent*, they might, or could be willing.
	Preterper.		*voluerint*, they might, could, should, or ought to have been willing.
	Preterplu.		*voluissent*, they might, could, should, or ought to had been willing.
	Future		*voluerint*, they may, or can be willing hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Singular of* Nolo, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*nolo*, I am unwilling.
	Preterim.		*nolebam*, I was unwilling.
	Preterper.		*nolui*, I have been unwilling.
	Preterplu.		*nolueram*, I had been unwilling.
	Future		*nolam*, I shall, or will be unwilling.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*nolim*, I may, or can be unwilling.
	Preterim.		*nollem*, I might, or could be unwilling.
	Preterper.		*noluerim*, I might, could, should, or ought to have been unwilling.
	Preterplu.		*noluissem*, I might, could, should, or ought to had been unwilling
	Future		*noluero*, I may, or can be unwilling.

Infi. M. { Preſ. and Preim. } *nolle*, { to be unwilling. } { Pretp. and Prepl. } *noluiſſe*, { to have, or had been unwilling.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of* Nolo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

Indic. Mood. Plural.

- Preſent T. — *nonvis*, thou art unwilling.
- Preterim. — *nolebas*, thou waſt unwilling.
- Preterper. — *noluiſti*, thou haſt been unwilling.
- Preterplu. — *nolueras*, thou hadſt been unwilling.
- Future — *noles*, thou ſhalt, or wilt be unwilling.

The Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *noli*, *nolito*, be thou unwilling.

Indic. Mood. Singular.

- Preſent T. — *nolis*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be unwilling.
- Preterim. — *nolles*, thou might'ſt, or could'ſt, be unwilling.
- Preterper. — *nolueris*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have been unwilling.
- Preterplu. — *noluiſſes*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to had been unwilling.
- Future — *nolueris*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be unwilling hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is the ſame.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the third Persons Singular of* Nolo, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Present T.	Singul.	*nonvult*, he is unwilling.
	Preterim.		*nolebat*, he was unwilling.
	Preterper.		*noluit*, he hath been unwilling.
	Preterplu.		*noluerat*, he had been unwilling.
	Future		*nolet*, he shall, or will be willing.

The Imperative Mood wants the third Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*nolit*, he may, or can be willing.
	Preterim.		*nollet*, he might, or could be unwilling.
	Preterper.		*noluerit*, he might, could, should, or ought to have been willing.
	Preterplu.		*noluisset*, he might, could, should, or ought to had been willing.
	Future		*noluerit*, he may, or can be willing hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Plural of* Nolo, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*nolumus*, we are unwilling.
	Preterim.		*nolebamus*, we were unwilling.
	Preterper.		*noluimus*, we have been willing.
	Preterplu.		*noluerāmus*, we had been willing.
	Future		*nolemus*, we shall, or will be willing.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Plural.

Pot

Potential Mood.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*nolimus*, we may, or can be unwilling.
Preterim.		*nollemus*, we might, or could be unwilling.
Preterper.		*noluerimus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been unwilling.
Preterplu.		*noluiſſemus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been unwilling.
Future		*noluerimus*, we may, or can be unwilling hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of* Nolo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*nonvultis*, ye are unwilling.
Preterim.		*nolebatis*, ye were unwilling.
Preterper.		*noluiſtis*, ye have been unwilling.
Preterplu.		*nolueratis*, ye had been unwilling.
Future		*noletis*, ye ſhall, or will be unwilling.

The Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *nolite*, *nolitote*, be ye unwilling.

Potential Mood.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*nolitis*, ye may, or can be unwilling.
Preterim.		*nolletis*, ye might, or could be unwilling.
Preterper.		*noluerit is*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been unwilling.
Preterplu.		*noluiſſetis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been unwilling.
Future		*noluerit is*, ye may, or can be unwilling hereafter.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the third Persons Plural of* Nolo, *throu out all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*nolunt*, they are unwilling.
	Preterim.		*nolebant*, they were unwill
	Preterper.		*noluerunt vel noluere*, they b been unwilling.
	Preterplu.		*noluerant*, they had been willing.
	Future		*nolent*, they shall, or will b willing.

The Imperative Mood wants the third Person Plur

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*nolint*, they may, or can b willing.
	Preterim.		*nollent*, they might, or coul unwilling.
	Preterper.		*noluerint*, they might, c should, or ought to have unwilling.
	Preterplu.		*noluissent*, they might, c should, or ought to had unwilling.
	Future		*noluerint*, they may, or ca unwilling hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Singular of* Malo, *throu out all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*malo*, I am more willing.
	Preterim.		*malebam*, I was more willi
	Preterper.		*malui*, I have been more wil
	Preterplu.		*malueram*, I had been m willing.
	Future		*malam*, I shall, or will be m willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.

Preſent T.	Singular.	*malim*, I may, or can be more willing.
Preterim.		*mallem*, I might, or could be more willing.
Preterper.		*maluerim*, I might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been more willing.
Preterplu.		*maluiſſem*, I might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been more willing.
Future		*maluerim*, I may, or can be more willing hereafter.

Inf. M.

Preſ. and Preim. *malle*, to be more willing. Prp. and Prpl. *maluiſſe*, to have, or had been more willing.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of* Malo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.

Preſent T.	Singular.	*mavis*, thou art more willing.
Preterim.		*malebas*, thou waſt more willing.
Preterper.		*maluiſti*, thou haſt been more willing.
Preterplu.		*malueras*, thou hadſt been more willing.
Future		*males*, thou ſhalt, or wilt be more willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*malis*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be more willing.
	Preterim.		*malles*, thou might'ſt, or could'ſt be more willing.
	Preterper.		*maluerís*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have been more willing.
	Preterplu.		*maluiſſes*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have been more willing.
	Future		*maluerís*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be more willing hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Singular of Malo throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*mavult*, he is more willing.
	Preterim.		*malebat*, he was more willing.
	Preterper.		*maluit*, he hath been more willing.
	Preterplu.		*maluerat*, he had been more willing.
	Future		*malet*, he ſhall, or will be more willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood. Singular.

Present T.	*malit*, he may, or can be more willing.
Preterim.	*mallet*, he might, or could be more willing.
Preterper.	*maluerit*, he might, could, should, or ought to have been more willing.
Preterplu.	*maluiſſet*, he might, could, should, or ought to had been more willing.
Future	*maluerit*, he may, or can be more willing hereafter.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Plural of* Malo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Plural.

Preſent T.	*malumus*, we are more willing.
Preterim.	*malebamus*, we were more willing.
Preterper.	*maluimus*, we have been more willing.
Preterplu.	*malueramus*, we had been more willing.
Future	*malemus*, we ſhall, or will be more willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*malimus*, we may, or can be more willing.
	Preterim.		*mallemus*, we might, or could be more willing.
	Preterper.		*maluerimus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been more willing.
	Preterplu.		*maluiſſemus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been more willing.
	Future		*maluerimus*, we may, or can be more willing hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of* Malo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*mavultis*, ye are more willing.
	Preterim.		*malebatis*, ye were more willing.
	Preterper.		*maluiſtis*, ye have been more willing.
	Preterplu.		*malueratis*, ye had been more willing.
	Future		*maletis*, ye ſhall, or will be more willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*malitis*, ye may, or can be more willing.
	Preterim.		*malletis*, ye might, or could be more willing.
	Preterper.		*maluerítis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been more willing.
	Preterplu.		*maluiſſetis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been more willing.
	Future		*malueritis*, ye may, or can be more willing hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Plural of* Malo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent.	Plural.	*malunt*, they are more willing.
	Preterimp.		*malebant*, they were more willing.
	Preterp.		*maluerunt vel ere*, they have been more willing.
	Preterplu.		*maluerant*, they had been more willing.
	Future		*malent*, they ſhall, or will be more willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*malint*, they may, or can be more willing.
	Preterim.		*mallent*, they might, or could be more willing.
	Preterper.		*maluerint*, they might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been more willing.
	Preterplu.		*maluiſſent*, they might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been more willing.
	Future		*maluerint*, they may, or can be more willing hereafter.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Singular of* Edo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*edo*, I eat.
	Preterim.		*edebam*, I did eat.
	Preterper.		*edi*, I have eat.
	Preterplu.		*ederam*, I had eat.
	Future		*edam*, I ſhall, or will eat.

The Imperative Mood wants the firſt Perſon Singular.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*edam*, I may, or can eat.
	Preterim.		*ederem vel eſſem*, I might, or could eat.
	Preterper.		*ederim*, I might, could, ſhould, or ought to have eat.
	Preterplu.		*ediſſem*, I might, could, ſhould, or ought to had eat.
	Future		*edero*, I may, or can eat hereafter.

Infi-

Infi. M. { Preſ. and Preim. } *edere, vel eſſe.* { to eat. } { Prep. and Prpl. } *ediſſe.* { to have, or had eaten.

Future, *eſurum eſſe*, to eat hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of* Edo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood. { Preſent T. / Preterim. / Preterper. / Preterplu. / Future } Singular. { *edis vel es*, thou eateſt. / *edebas*, thou didſt eat. / *ediſti*, thou haſt eat. / *ederas*, thou hadſt eat. / *edes*, thou ſhalt, or wilt eat.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *es*, *eſto*, *edo*, *edito*, eat thou.

Potential Mood. { Prefent T. / Preterim. / Preterper. / Preterplu. / Future. } Singular. { *edes*, thou may'ſt, or canſt eat. / *ederes vel eſſes*, thou might'ſt, or could'ſt eat. / *ederis*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have eat. / *ediſſes*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to had eat. / *ederis*, thou may'ſt, or canſt eat hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Singular of* Edo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood. { Preſent T. / Preterim. / Preterper. / Preterplu. / Future } Singular. { *edit vel eſt*, he eateth. / *:debat*, he did eat. / *edit*, he hath eat. / *:derat*, he had eat. / *edet*, he ſhall, or will eat.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *edat, eſto, edi*
eat he, or let him eat.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*edat*, he may, or can eat.
	Preterim.		*ederet vel eſſet*, he might, could eat.
	Preterper.		*ederit*, he might, could, ſhould or ought to have eat.
	Preterplu.		*ediſſet*, he might, could, ſhould or ought to had eat.
	Future		*ederit*, he may, or can eat hereafter.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Plural of Edo throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*edimus*, we eat.
	Preterim.		*edebamus*, we did eat.
	Preterper.		*edimus*, we have eat.
	Preterplu.		*ederamus*, we had eat.
	Future		*edemus*, we ſhall, or will eat.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *edamus*, l
us eat.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*edamus*, we may, or can eat.
	Preterim.		*ederemus vel eſſemus*, we might or could eat.
	Preterper.		*ederimus*, we might, could ſhould, or ought to have eat
	Preterplu.		*ediſſemus*, we might, could ſhould, or ought to had eat
	Future		*ederimus*, we may, or can e hereafter.

Q. W

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of* Edo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*editis vel eſtis*, ye eat.
	Preterim.		*edebatis*, ye did eat.
	Preterper.		*ediſtis*, ye have eaten.
	Preterpl.		*ederatis*, ye had eaten.
	Future		*edetis*, ye ſhall, or will eat.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *edite*, *eſte*, *eſtote*, *editote*, eat ye.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*edatis*, ye may, or can eat.
	Preterim.		*ederetis vel eſſetis*, ye might, or could eat.
	Preterper.		*ederitis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to have eaten
	Preterplu.		*ediſſetis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to had eaten.
	Future		*ederitis*, ye may, or can eat hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Plural of* Edo, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*edunt*, they eat.
	Preterim.		*edebant*, they did eat.
	Preterper.		*ederunt vel edere*, they have eat.
	Preterplu.		*ederant*, they had eaten.
	Future		*edent*, they ſhall, or will eat.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *edant, edunto*, let them eat.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*edant*, they may, or can eat.
	Preterim.		*ederent vel eſſent*, they might, or could eat.
	Preterper.		*ederint*, they might, could, ſhould, or ought to have eaten.
	Preterplu.		*ediſſent*, they might, could, ſhould, or ought to had eat.
	Future		*ederint*, they may, or can eat hereafter.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Singular of* Fio, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*fio*, I am made, or done.
	Preterim.		*fiebam*, I was made, or done.
	Preterper.		*factus ſum vel fui*, I have been made or done.
	Preterplu.		*factus eram vel fueram*, I had been made, or done.
	Future		*fiam*, I ſhall, or will be made or done.

Imperative Mood wants the firſt Perſon Singular.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*fiam*, I may, or can be made, or done.
	Preterim.		*fierem*, I might, or could be made or done.
	Preterper.		*factus ſim vel fuerim*, I might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been made or done.
	Preterplu.		*factus eſſem vel fuiſſem*, I might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been made or done.
	Future		*factus ero vel fuero*, I may, or can be made, or done hereafter.

Pref. and Pim. *fieri*, to be made or done. Prp. and Prpl. *factum esse vel fuisse*, to have, or had been made, or done.

Future, *factum iri vel faciendum esse*, to be made, or done hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of* Fio, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Singular.

Preſent. T.	*fis*, thou art made, or done.
Preterim.	*fiebas*, thou waſt made, or done.
Preterper.	*factus es vel fuiſti*, thou haſt been made, or done.
Preterplu.	*factus eras vel fueras*, thou hadſt been made, or done.
Future	*fies*, thou ſhalt, or wilt be made, or done.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *fito tu*, be thou made, or done.

Potential Mood. Singular

Preſent T.	*fias*, thou may'ſt, or canſt be made or done.
Preterim.	*fieres*, thou might'ſt, or could'ſt be made, or done.
Preterper.	*factus ſis vel fueris*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have been made, or done.
Preterplu.	*factus eſſes vel fuiſſes*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to had been made, or done.
Future	*factus eris vel fueris*, thou may'ſt or canſt be made, or done hereafter.

The

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Singular of* Fio, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*fit*, he is made, or done.
	Preterim.		*fiebat*, he was made, or done.
	Preterper.		*factus eſt vel fuit*, he hath been made, or done.
	Preterplu.		*factus erat vel fuerat*, he had been made, or done.
	Future		*fiet*, he ſhall, or will be made, or done.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *fiat*, *fiat*, let him be made, or done.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*fiat*, he may, or can be made, or done.
	Preterim.		*fieret*, he might, or could be made, or done.
	Preterper.		*factus ſit vel fuerit*, he might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been made, or done.
	Preterplu.		*factus eſſet vel fuiſſet*, he might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been made, or done.
	Future		*factus erit vel fuerit*, he may, or can be made, or done hereafter.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the first Persons Plural of* Fio, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*fimus*, we are made, or done.
	Preterim.		*fiebamus*, we were made, or done.
	Preterper.		*facti simus vel fuimus*, we have been made, or done.
	Preterplu.		*facti eramus vel fueramus*, we had been made, or done.
	Future		*fiemus*, we shall, or will be made, or done.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *fiamus*, let us be made, or done.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Plural.	*fiamus*, we may, or can be made, or done.
	Preterim.		*fieremus*, we might, or could be made, or done.
	Preterper.		*facti simus vel fuerimus*, we might, could, should, or ought to have been made, or done.
	Preterplu.		*facti essemus vel fuissemus*, we might, could, should, or ought to had been made, or done.
	Future		*facti erimus vel fuerimus*, we may, or can be made, or done hereafter.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of* Fio, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Plural.

Preſent T.	*fitis*, ye are made, or done.
Preterim.	*fiebatis*, ye were made, or done.
Preterper.	*facti eſtis vel fuiſtis*, ye have been made, or done.
Preterplu.	*facti eratis vel fueratis*, ye had been made, or done.
Future	*fietis*, ye ſhall, or will be made or done.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *fite*, *fitote*, ye made, or done.

Potential Mood. Plural.

Preſent T.	*fiatis*, ye may, or can be made or done.
Preterim.	*fieretis*, ye might, or could be made, or done.
Preterper.	*facti ſitis vel fueritis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been made, or done.
Preterplu.	*facti eſſetis vel fuiſſetis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been made, or done.
Future	*facti eritis vel fueritis*, ye may or can be made, or done hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Persons Plural of* Fio, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood. — Plural.

- Present T. — *fiunt*, they are made, or done.
- Preterim. — *fiebant*, they were made, or done.
- Preterper. — *facti sunt, fuerunt vel fuere*, they have been made, or done.
- Preterplu. — *facti erant vel fuerant*, they had been made, or done.
- Future — *fient*, they shall, or will be made, or done.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *fiant*, *fiunto*, let them be made, or done.

Potential Mood. — Plural.

- Present T. — *fiant*, they may, or can be made, or done.
- Preterim. — *fierent*, they might, or could be made, or done.
- Preterper. — *facti sint vel fuerint*, they might, could, should, or ought to have been made, or done.
- Preterplu. — *facti essent vel fuissent*, they might, could, should, or ought to had been made, or done.
- Future — *facti erunt vel fuerint*, they may, or can be made, or done hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Singular of* Fero, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Ind. Mood. — Singular.

- Present T. — *fero*, I bear, or suffer.
- Preterim. — *ferebam*, I did bear, or suffer.
- Preterper. — *tuli*, I have born, or suffered.
- Preterplu. — *tuleram*, I had born, or suffered.
- Future — *feram*, I shall, or will, bear or suffer.

The

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood. Singular.

Present T.	*feram*, I may, or can bear, or suffer.
Preterim.	*ferrem*, I might, or could bear, or suffer.
Preterper.	*tulerim*, I might, could, should or ought to have born, or suffered.
Preterplu.	*tulissem*, I might, could, should or ought to had born, or suffered.
Future	*tulero*, I may, or can bear, or suffer hereafter.

Infi. M. Preſen. and Pretim. *ferre*, to bear, or ſuffer. Pret. and Prpl. *tuliſſe*, to have, or had born, or ſuffered.

Future Tenſe, *laturum eſſe*, to bear, or ſuffer hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Singular of* Fero, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Singular.

Present T.	*fers*, thou beareſt, or ſuffereſt.
Preterim.	*ferebas*, thou didſt bear, or ſuffer.
Preterper.	*tuliſti*, thou haſt born, or ſuffered.
Preterplu.	*tuleras*, thou hadſt born, or ſuffered.
Future	*feres*, thou ſhalt, or wilt bear or ſuffer.

Imper

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *fer*, *ferto*, do thou bear, or ſuffer.

Potential Mood. Singular.

Preſent T.	*feras*, thou may'ſt, or canſt bear, or ſuffer.
Preterim.	*ferres*, thou might'ſt, or could'ſt bear, or ſuffer.
Preterper.	*tulerïs*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to have born, or ſuffered.
Preterplu.	*tuliſſes*, thou might'ſt, could'ſt, ſhould'ſt, or ought'ſt to had born, or ſuffered.
Future	*tulerïs*, thou may'ſt, or canſt bear, or ſuffer hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the ſame.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Singular of* Fero, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indicative Mood. Singular.

Preſent T.	*fert*, he bears, or ſuffers.
Preterim.	*ferebat*, he did bear, or ſuffer.
Preterper.	*tulit*, he hath born, or ſuffered.
Preterplu.	*tulerat*, he had born, or ſuffered.
Future	*feret*, he ſhall, or will bear, or ſuffer.

Impera-

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *ferat*, *fer*
let him bear, or ſuffer.

Potential Mood.	Preſent T.	Singular.	*ferat*, he may, or can bear, o ſuffer.
	Preterim.		*ferret*, he might, or could be or ſuffer.
	Preterper.		*tulerit*, he might, could, ſhoul or ought to have born, o ſuffered.
	Preterplu.		*tuliſſet*, he might, could, ſhoul or ought to had born, ſuffered.
	Future		*tulerit*, he may, or can bear, ſuffer hereafter.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Plural of* Fero, *throu out all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	Preſent T.	Plural.	*ferimus*, we bear, or ſuffer.
	Preterim.		*ferebamus*, we did bear, or ſuffe
	Preterper.		*tulimus*, we have born, ſuffered.
	Preterplu.		*tuleramus*, we had born, ſuffered.
	Future		*feremus*, we ſhall, or will bea ſuffer.

The Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *feramus*, us bear, or ſuffer.

Poten

Preſent T.	Plural.	*feramus*, we may, or can bear, or ſuffer.
Preterim.		*ferremus*, we might, or could bear, or ſuffer.
Preterper.		*tulerimus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to have born, or ſuffered.
Preterplu.		*tuliſſemus*, we might, could, ſhould, or ought to had born, or ſuffered.
Future		*tulerimus*, we may, or can bear, or ſuffer hereafter.

What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of Fero, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

Preſent T.	Plural.	*fertis*, ye bear, or ſuffer.
Preterim.		*ferebatis*, ye did bear, or ſuffer.
Preterper.		*tuliſtis*, ye have born, or ſuffered.
Preterplu.		*tuleratis*, ye had born, or ſuffered.
Future		*feretis*, ye ſhall, or will bear, or ſuffer.

perative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *ferte*, *fertote*, bear, or ſuffer ye.

Preſent T.	Plural.	*feratis*, ye may, or can bear, or ſuffer.
Preterim.		*ferretis*, ye might, or could bear, or ſuffer.
Preterper.		*tuleritis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to have born, or ſuffered.
Preterplu.		*tuliſſetis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to had born, or ſuffered.
Future		*tuleritis*, ye may, or can bear, or ſuffer hereafter.

Q. *What*

Q. *What are the third Persons Plural of* Fero, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Plural.

Present T.	*ferunt*, they bear, or suffer.
Preterim.	*ferebant*, they did bear, or suffer.
Preterper.	*tulerunt vel tulere*, they have born, or suffered.
Preterplu.	*tulerant*, they had born, or suffered.
Future	*ferent*, they shall, or will bear or suffer.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *ferant*, *ferunto*, let them bear, or suffer.

Potential Mood. Plural.

Present T.	*ferant*, they may, or can bear or suffer.
Preterim.	*ferrent*, they might, or could bear, or suffer.
Preterper.	*tulerint*, they might, could, should, or ought to have born or suffered.
Preterplu.	*tulissent*, they might, could, should, or ought to had born or suffered.
Future	*tulerint*, they may, or can have born or suffer hereafter.

Q. *What are the first Persons Singular of* Fero *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. Mood. Singular.

Present T.	*feror*, I am born, or suffered.
Preterim.	*ferebar*, I was born, or suffered.
Preterper.	*latus sum vel fui*, I have been born, or suffered.
Preterplu.	*latus eram vel fueram*, I had been born, or suffered.
Future	*ferar*, I shall, or will be born or suffered.

Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Singular.	Present T.	*ferar*, I may, or can be born, or suffered.
	Preterim.	*ferrer*, I might, or could be born, or suffered.
	Preterper.	*latus sim vel fuerim*, I might, could, should, or ought to have been born, or suffered.
	Preterplu.	*latus essem vel fuissem*, I might, could, should, or ought to had been born, or suffered.
	Future	*latus ero vel fuero*, I may, or can be born, or suffered hereafter.

Infinitive Mood.

ferri, to be born, or suffered. Prp. and Prpl. *latum esse vel fuisse*, to have, or had been born, or suffered.

ire, latum iri vel ferendum esse, to be born, or suffered hereafter.

What are the second Persons Singular of Feror, *throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

Plural.	Present T.	*ferris vel ferre*, thou art born, or suffered.
	Preterim.	*ferebaris vel ferebare*, thou wast born, or suffered.
	Preterper.	*latus es vel fuisti*, thou hast been born, or suffered.
	Preterplu.	*latus eras vel fueras*, thou hadst been born, or suffered.
	Future	*fereris vel ferere*, thou shalt, or wilt be born, or suffered.

Impe-

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *ferre*, *fe*
be thou born, or suffered.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*feraris vel ferare*, thou ma or canst be born, or suff
	Preterim.		*ferreris vel ferrere*, t might'st, or could'st be b or suffered.
	Preterper.		*latus sis vel fueris*, thou mig could'st, should'st, or ou to have been born, or suff
	Preterplu.		*latus esses vel fuisses*, might'st, could'st, shou or ought'st to had been b or suffered.
	Future		*latus eris vel fueris*, thou ma or canst be born, or suff hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

Q. *What are the third Persons Singular of F throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	*fertur*, he is born, or suffer
	Preterim.		*ferebatur*, he was born, or suff
	Preterper.		*latus est vel fuit*, he hath born, or suffered.
	Preterplu.		*latus erat vel fuerat*, he had born, or suffered.
	Future		*feretur*, he shall, or will be or suffered.

Imp

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Singular, *ferator, fertor*, let him be born, or ſuffered.

Indicative Mood	Preſent T.	*feratur*, he may, or can be born, or ſuffered.
	Preterim.	*ferretur*, he might, or could be born, or ſuffered.
	Preterper.	*latus ſit vel fuerit*, he might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been born, or ſuffered.
	Preterplu.	*latus eſſet vel fuiſſet*, he might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been born, or ſuffered.
	Future	*latus erit vel fuerit*, he may, or can be born, or ſuffered hereafter.

Singular.

Q. *What are the firſt Perſons Plural of* Feror, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Indicative Mood	Preſent T.	*ferimur*, we are born, or ſuffered.
	Preterim.	*ferebamur*, we were born, or ſuffered.
	Preterper.	*lati ſumus vel fuimus*, we have been born, or ſuffered.
	Preterplu.	*lati eramus vel fueramus*, we had been born, or ſuffered.
	Future	*feremur*, we ſhall, or will be born, or ſuffered.

Plural.

Impe-

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *feramur*, let
be born, or ſuffered.

Potential Mood. Plural.

- Preſent T. — *feramur*, we may, or can be bo
  or ſuffered.
- Preterim. — *ferremur*, we might or could
  born, or ſuffered.
- Preterper. — *lati ſimus vel fuerimus*,
  might, could, ſhould, or ou
  to have been born, or ſuff
- Preterplu. — *lati eſſemus vel fuiſſemus*,
  might, could, ſhould
  ought to had been bor
  ſuffered.
- Future T. — *lati erimus vel fuerimus*,
  may, or can be born,
  ſuffered hereafter.

Q. *What are the ſecond Perſons Plural of Pe
throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Potential Mood. Plural.

- Preſent T. — *ferimini*, ye are born, or ſu
  ed.
- Preterim. — *ferebamini*, ye were born
  ſuffered.
- Preterper. — *lati eſtis vel fuiſtis*, ye
  been born, or ſuffered.
- Preterplu. — *lati eratis vel fueratis*, ye
  been born, or ſuffered.
- Future — *feremini*, ye ſhall, or wi
  born, or ſuffered.

Imperative Mood, Preſent Tenſe Plural, *ferimini, ferimino*r, be ye born, or ſuffered.

Preſent T.	Plural	*feramini*, ye may, or can be born, or ſuffered.
Preterim.	Plural	*ferremini*, ye might, or could be born, or ſuffered.
Preterper.	Plural	*lati ſitis vel fueritis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to have been born, or ſuffered.
Preterplu.	Plural	*lati eſſetis vel fuiſſetis*, ye might, could, ſhould, or ought to had been born, or ſuffered.
Future	Plural	*lati eritis vel fueritis*, ye may, or can be born, or ſuffered hereafter.

Q. *What are the third Perſons Plural of* Feror, *throughout all Moods and Tenſes?*

A.

Preſent T.	Plural	*feruntur*, they are born, or ſuffered.
Preterim.	Plural	*ferebantur*, they were born, or ſuffered.
Preterper.	Plural	*lati ſunt fuerunt vel fuere*, they have been born, or ſuffered.
Preterplu.	Plural	*lati erant vel fuerant*, they had been born, or ſuffered.
Future	Plural	*ferentur*, they ſhall, or will be born, or ſuffered.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *ferantur, ferantur* let them be born, or suffered.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Plural	*ferantur*, they may, or can be born, or suffered.
	Preterim.		*ferrentur*, they might, or could be born, or suffered.
	Preterper.		*lati sint vel fuerint*, they might, could, should, or ought have been born, or suffered.
	Preterplu.		*lati essent vel fuissent*, they might, could, should, ought to had been born, or suffered.
	Future		*lati erunt vel fuerint*, they may or can be born, or suffered hereafter.

Q. *But why do you form the Potential Mood, in the irregular Verbs, and not the Subjunctive, especially because there is no Potential Mood set down, is it therefore an error in so doing?*

A. No; for these Verbs irregular, have both the Potential and Subjunctive Mood, which are formed like the Optative, and do only differ in signification, and use of the Mood.

Q. *Why are not the Potential and the Subjunctive Moods expresst, as well as the Optative.*

A. Only for brevity's sake, and for no other reason.

Q. *Of what Conjugation are the Verbs Eo and Queo?*

A. Of the fourth Conjugation.

Q. *Are they formed like Verbs in* o, *of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A. No; they make *ibam* and *quibam*, in the Preterperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood, and *ibo* and *quibo*, in the Future Tense, and in Gerunds, they make *eundi, do, dum, queundi, do, dum.*

2. W

Q. *What Tenſes are formed from the Preterperfect Tenſe of the Indicative Mood?*

A. The Preterpluperfect Tenſe of the Indicative Mood, the Preterperfect Tenſe, the Preterpluperfect Tenſe, and the Future Tenſe, of the Optative, the Potential, and the Subjunctive Moods, and the Preterperfect Tenſe, and the Preterpluperfect Tenſe of the Infinitive Mood.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. From *amavi*, the Preterperfect Tenſe of the Indicative Mood, are formed *amaveram*, (the Preterpluperfect Tenſe of the Indicative Mood) *amaverim*, (the Preterperfect Tenſe) *amaviſſem*, (the Preterpluperfect Tenſe) *amavero*, the Future Tenſe of the Optative, the Potential, and the Subjunctive Moods) *amaviſſe*, (the Preterperfect Tenſe, and Preterpluperfect Tenſe of the Infinitive Mood.)

Q. *How are Verbs Impersonals declined?*

A. Throughout all Moods and Tenſes in the Voice of the third Perſons Singular.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. *Delectat, delectabat, delectavit, delectaverat, delectabit, delectare.*

Q. *How is* decet *declined?*

A. *Decet, decebat, decuit, decuerat, decebit, decere.*

Q. *Are there any Impersonals of the Paſſive Voice?*

A. Yes.

Q. *Give an Example of a Verb Impersonal of the Paſſive Voice.*

A. Studetur.

Q. *How is* Studetur *declined?*

A. *Studetur, ſtudebatur, ſtuditum eſt vel fuit, ſtuditum erat vel fuerat, ſtudebitur, ſtuderi.*

Q. *What Sign have Verbs Impersonals commonly before their Engliſh.*

A. The Sign (it) as it delighteth, *delectat*, it becometh not, *non decet.*

Of the Participles.

Q. *What is a Participle?*

A. A Participle is a part of Speech derived from a Verb.

Q. *What doth a Participle take part of?*

A. It takes part of a Noun, and also part of a Verb, and part both of a Noun and Verb together.

Q. *Wherein doth a Participle take part of a Noun?*

A. In Gender, Case and Declension; for as a Noun hath Gender, Case and Declension, so hath a Participle.

Q. *Wherein doth a Participle take part of a Verb?*

A. In Tense and signification, for as a Verb hath Tense and signification, so hath a Participle.

Q. *Wherein doth a Participle take part both of Noun and Verb?*

A. In Number and Figure; for as a Noun and a Verb have Number and Figure, so hath a Participle.

Q. *How many kinds of Participles are there?*

A. Four; one of the Present Tense, one of the Preter Tense, one of the Future in *rus*, and another of the Future in *dus*.

Q. *How do you know a Participle of the Present Tense?*

A. A Participle of the Present Tense hath his English ending in *ing*, as loving, teaching, reading, hearing, and his Latin ends in *ans* or *ens*, as *amans*, *docens*, *legens*, *audiens*.

Q. *From whence is a Participle of the Present Tense formed?*

A. From the Preterimperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood, by changing the last Syllable into *ns*.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. From *amabam*, the Preterimperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood, is formed the Participle of the Present Tense *amans*, by changing the last Syllable *bam* into *ns*, as *ama-bam*, *ama-ns*.

Q. *What*

Q. *What Participle is* amans?

A. A Participle of the Preſent Tenſe, becauſe it ends in *ans* in the Latin, and in *ing* in the Engliſh.

Q. *How do you know a Participle of the Future in* rus?

A. A Participle of the Future in *rus*, always ends in *rus*, in the Nominative Caſe Singular, and betokens to do like the Infinitive Mood of the Active Voice.

Q. *Give an Example of a Participle of the Future in* rus.

A. *Amaturus*, to love, or about to love, engliſhed like the Infinitive Mood *amare*.

Q. *From whence is a Participle of the Future in* rus *formed?*

A. From the latter Supine, by putting thereto *rus*.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. From *doctu*, the latter Supine is formed *docturus*, the Participle of the Future in *rus*.

Q. *How do you know that* docturus *is a Participle of the Future in* rus?

A. Becauſe it ends in *rus*, and ſignifies to do like the Infinitive Mood Active.

Q. *How do you know a Participle of the Preterperfect Tenſe?*

A. A Participle of the Preterperfect Tenſe hath his Engliſh ending either in *d*, *t*, or *n*; as loved, taught, ſlain; and his Latin ends either in *tus*, *ſus*, or *xus*, as *amatus*, *viſus*, *nexus*; one ends in *uus*, as *mortuus*.

Q. *Whence is a Participle of the Preterperfect Tenſe formed?*

A. From the latter Supine, by putting thereto *s*, as from *lectu* the latter Supine is formed *lectus*, the Participle of the Preter Tenſe.

Q. *How do you know that* lectus *is a Participle of the Preter Tenſe?*

A. Becauſe it ends in *tus* in the Latin, and in *d* in the Engliſh.

Q. *How do you know a Participle of the Future in* dus?

A. A Participle of the Future in *dus*, betokeneth to ſuffer, like the Infinitive Mood of the Paſſive Voice, as *amandus*, to be loved, engliſhed like *amari* the Infinitive Mood Paſſive.

Q. *Whence is a Participle of the Future in* dus *formed?*

A. From the Genitive Caſe of the Participle of the Preſent Tenſe.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. From *amantis* the Genitive Caſe of the Participle of the Preſent Tenſe, is formed *amandus* the Future in *dus*, by changing the laſt Syllable *tis* into *dus*, *aman-tis*, *aman-dus*.

Q. *How do you know that* amandus *is a Participle of the Future in* dus?

A. Becauſe it ends in *dus*, and hath the ſignification of the Infinitive Mood Paſſive.

Q. *Hath the Participle of the Future in* dus *always the ſignification of the Infinitive Mood Paſſive?*

A. No; ſometimes it hath the ſignification of the Participle of the Preſent Tenſe; as *legendis veterib. proficis*, in read-ing old Authors thou doſt profit.

Q. *You ſay that Participles are derived from Verbs, tell me then how many Participles are derived from a Verb Active, and from a Verb Neuter, which have the Supines?*

A. Two; one of the Preſent Tenſe, and another of the Future in *rus*.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. From the Verb Active *amo*, is derived *amans*, the Participle of the Preſent Tenſe, and *amaturus* the Participle of the Future in *rus*; and from *curro*, the Verb Neuter, are derived *currens*, the Participle of the Preſent Tenſe; and *curſurus* the Participle of the Future in *rus*.

Q. *But how if the Verb Active or Neuter want the Supines? how many Participles are then derived from them?*

A. Only one, and that's a Participle of the Preſent Tenſe.

Q. *Why ſo?*

A. Becauſe the Participle of the Future in *rus*, is formed from the latter Supine, ſo that if the Supines be wanting, there can be no Future in *rus*, becauſe no Supine to form it from.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. From the Verb Active *metuo*, which wants the Supines, is formed only *metuens*, the Participle of the Preſent Tenſe; and from *ſtrideo*, the Verb Neuter, which wants the Supines, is formed only *ſtridens*, the Participle of the Preſent Tenſe.

Q. *How many Participles are derived from a Verb Paſſive, whoſe Active hath the Supines?*

A. Two; one of the Preter Tenſe, and another of the Future in *dus*.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. From the Verb Paſſive *amor*, whoſe Active *amo* hath the Supines, are derived *amatus*, the Participle of the Preter Tenſe; and *amandus* the Participle of the Future in *dus*.

Q. *But how many Participles are derived from a Verb Paſſive, whoſe Active wants the Supines?*

A. Only one; a Participle of the Future in *dus*; as from *metuor* the Verb Paſſive, whoſe Active *metuo* wants the Supines, is formed only *metuendus*, a Participle of the Future in *dus*.

Q. *Why hath it not the Participle of the Preter Tenſe?*

A. Becauſe the Verb Active *metuo* wants the Supines, from which the Participle of the Preter Tenſe is formed.

Q. *How many Participles be derived from a Verb Deponent?*

A. Three; one of the Preſent Tenſe, one of the Preter Tenſe, and one of the Future in *rus*.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. From *auxilior the Verb Deponent* is derived *auxilians* the Participle of the Preſent Tenſe, *auxiliatus* the Participle of the Preter Tenſe, *auxiliaturus* the Participle of the Future in *rus*.

Q. *When will a Verb Deponent form a Participle in* dus?

A. When it governs an Accuſative Caſe.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. From *loquor* a Verb Deponent, which will govern an Accuſative Caſe, cometh *loquendus* a Participle of the Future in *dus*.

Q. *How many Participles are derived from a Verb Commune?*

A. Four; as from *largior* a Verb Commune cometh *largiens* the Participle of the Preſent Tenſe, *largiturus* a Participle of the Future in *rus*, *largitus* a Participle of the Preter Tenſe, and *largiendus* a Participle of the Future in *dus*.

Q. *What are Participles declined like?*

A. Like Nouns Adjectives, ſome of three Articles, and ſome of three Terminations.

Q. *How many Participles be declined like Nouns Adjectives of three Articles?*

A. Only one, a Participle of the Preſent Tenſe.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. *Amans.*

Q. *Decline* amans.

A.	Singular.	Nom. *hic, hæc & hoc amans.*
		Gen. *hujus amantis.*
		Dat. *huic amanti.*
		Acc. *hunc & hanc amantem, & hoc amans.*
		Voc. *ô amans.*
		Abl. *ab hoc, hac & hoc amante, vel amanti.*

Plural.

Plural.
Nom. *hi & hæ amantes, & hæc amantia.*
Gen. *horum, harum & horum amantium.*
Dat. *his amantibus.*
Acc. *hos & has amantes, & hæc amantia.*
Voc. *ô amantes, & ô amantia.*
Abl. *ab his amantibus.*

Q. *How many Participles are declined like Nouns Adjective of three Terminations?*
A. Three; a Participle of the Preter Tenſe, a Participle of the Future in *rus*, and a Participle of the Future in *dus*.
Q. *Give an Example ſeverally.*
A. *Amatus, amata, amatum*, of the Preter Tenſe; *amaturus, amatura, amaturum*, of the Future in *rus*; *amandus, amanda, amandum*, of the Future in *dus*.
Q. *Decline* amatus.
A.

Singular.
Nom. *amatus, amata, amatum.*
Gen. *amati, amatæ, amati.*
Dat. *amato, amatæ, amato.*
Acc. *amatum, amatam, amatum.*
Voc. *amate, amata, amatum.*
Abl. *amato, amata, amato.*

Plural.
Nom. *amati, amatæ, amata.*
Gen. *amatorum, amatarum, amatorum.*
Dat. *amatis.*
Acc. *amatos, amatas, amata.*
Voc. *amati, amatæ, amata.*
Abl. *amatis.*

Q. *Decline* amaturus.
A.

Singular.
Nom. *amaturus, amatura, amaturum.*
Gen. *amaturi, amaturæ, amaturi.*
Dat. *amaturo, amaturæ, amaturo.*
Acc. *amaturum, amaturam, amaturum.*
Voc. *amature, amatura, amaturum.*
Abl. *amaturo, amatura, amaturo.*

Pluraliter
Nom. *amaturi, amaturæ, amatura.*
Gen. *amaturorum, amaturarum, amaturorum.*
Dat. *amaturis.*
Acc. *amaturos, amaturas, amatura.*
Voc. *amaturi, amaturæ, amatura.*
Abl. *amaturis.*

Q. *Decline* amandus.
A.

Singulariter
Nom. *amandus, amanda, amandum.*
Gen. *amandi, amandæ, amandi.*
Dat. *amando, amandæ, amando.*
Acc. *amandum, amandam, amandum.*
Voc. *amande, amanda, amandum.*
Abl. *amando, amanda, amando.*

Pluraliter
Nom. *amandi, amandæ, amanda.*
Gen. *amandorum, amandarum, amandorum.*
Dat. *amandis.*
Acc. *amandos, amandas, amanda.*
Voc. *amandi, amandæ, amanda.*
Abl. *amandis.*

Of an Adverb.

Q. WHat is an *Adverb*?
A. An Adverb is a part of Speech, joyned to Verbs moſt commonly.
Q. *Why are Adverbs joyned to Verbs?*
A. To declare their Signification.
Q. *How many kinds of Adverbs are there?*
A. Twenty four.
Q. *Which be they?*
A. Firſt, Adverbs of time; as *hodie*, to day, &c.
2. Of place; as *ubi*, where; *ibi*, there, &c.
3. Of number; as *ſemel*, once; *bis*, twice, &c.

4. Of order; as *inde*, from thence, *&c.*
5. Of asking, or doubting; as *cur*, why, *&c.*
6. Of calling; as *heus*, ho; *ô*, ſoho, *&c.*
7. Of affirming; as *certe*, certainly, *&c.*
8. Of denying; as *non*, *no*; *haud*, ſcarcely, *&c.*
9. Of ſwearing; as *pol*, by *Pollux*, *&c.*
10. Of exhorting; as *eia*, well; *age*, go to, *&c.*
11. Of flattering; as *ſodes*, I pray thee, *&c.*
12. Of forbidding; as *ne*, not.
13. Of wiſhing; as *utinam*, I wiſh, *&c.*
14. Of gathering together; as *ſimul*, together, *&c.*
15. Of parting; as *ſeorſim*, aſunder, *&c.*
16. Of chooſing; as *potius*, rather, *&c.*
17. Of a thing not finiſhed; as *pene*, almoſt, *&c.*
18. Of ſhewing; as *en*, lo; *ecce*, behold.
19. Of doubting; as *forſan*, perhaps, *&c.*
20. Of chance; as *forte*, by hap, *&c.*
21. Of likeneſs; as *ſic*, ſo; *ſicut*, as, *&c.*
22. Of quality; as *bene*, well; *male*, ill, *&c.*
23. Of quantity; as *multum*, much, *&c.*
24. Of compariſon; as *tam*, ſo; *quam*, as, *&c.*

Q. *What Adverbs be compared?*

A. Some which be derived from Nouns Adjectives and Prepoſitions.

Q. *What are they?*

A. *Docte*, learnedly, derived from the Adjective *doctus*; *fortiter*, valiantly, from the Adjective *fortis*; *prope*, nigh, from the Prepoſition *prope*.

Q. *Compare* docte.

A. *Docte*, learnedly; *doctius*, more learnedly; *doctiſſime*, moſt learnedly.

Q. *How is the Adverb* fortiter *compared?*

A. *Fortiter*, valiantly; *fortius*, more valiantly; *fortiſſime*, moſt valiantly.

Q. *How is the Adverb* prope *compared?*

A. *Prope*, near; *propius*, more near; *proxime*, moſt near, or neareſt.

Q. *When*

Q. *When are Prepositions turned into Adverbs?*

A. When they be put without their Case that they properly govern, they are called (or turned into) Adverbs.

Q. *Give an Example or two.*

A. *Qui ante non cavet, post dolebit*; *ante* being put without its Case, is turned into an Adverb, and *post* being set without a Case, is not a Preposition, but an Adverb.

Of a Conjunction.

Q. *What is a Conjunction?*

A. A part of Speech that joyneth Words and Sentences together.

Q. *How many kinds of Conjunctions are there?*

A. Twelve.

Q. *Which be they?*

A. Of Conjunctions, some be first, Copulatives, as *&*, and; *que*, and, *&c.*

2. Disjunctives, as *aut*, or; *ve*, or, *&c.*
3. Discretives, as *sed*, but; *quidem*, indeed, *&c.*
4. Causals, as *nam*, for; *namque*, for, *&c.*
5. Conditionals, as *si*, if; *sin*, but if, *&c.*
6. Exceptives, as *ni*, unless; *nisi*, except, *&c.*
7. Interrogatives, as *ne*, whether or no, *&c.*
8. Illatives, as *ergo*, therefore; *ideo*, therefore, *&c.*
9. Adversatives, as *etsi*, although, *&c.*
10. Redditives to the same, as *tamen*, yet, *&c.*
11. Electives, as *quam*, as; *ac*, as; *atque*, as, *&c.*
12. Diminutives, as *saltem*, at the least, *&c.*

Of a Preposition.

Q. *What is a Preposition?*

A. A part of Speech most commonly set before other parts of Speech.

Q. *How*

Q. *How is a Preposition set before other Parts of Speech?*
A. Two ways, either in Apposition, as *ad patrem*, or secondly in Composition, as *indoctus*.
Q. *When is a Preposition set in Apposition?*
A. When it is set before a Case and governs it, as *ad patrem*.
Q. *When is a Preposition set in Composition?*
A. When it is joyned with another word, as *indoctus*.
Q. *What Cases do Prepositions govern?*
A. Prepositions do commonly govern an Accusative or an Ablative Case, seldom any other.
Q. *How many Prepositions do govern an Accusative Case?*
A. Thirty two; *ad*, to; *apud*, at; *ante*, before; *adversus*, *adversum*, against; *cis*, *citra*, on this side; *circum*, *circa*, about; *contra*, against; *erga*, towards; *extra*, without; *intra*, within; *inter*, between; *infra*, beneath; *juxta*, besides, or nigh to; *ob*, for; *pone*, behind; *per*, by or through; *prope*, nigh; *propter*, for; *secundum*, *post*, after; *trans*, on the further side; *ultra*, beyond; *praeter*, besides; *supra*, above; *circiter*, about; *usque*, until; *secus*, by; *versus*, towards; *penes*, in the power.
Q. *What Prepositions are set after their casual words, that is, those words that they govern?*
A. *Versus* is set after his casual word, as *Londinum versus*, towards *London*; and so may *penes*, *tenus*, *cum*, and *usque* be set.
Q. *How many Prepositions do govern an Ablative Case?*
A. Fifteen, *a*, *ab*, *abs*, from or fro, *cum*, with; *coram*, before or in presence; *clam*, privily; *de*, *e*, *ex*, of or fro; *pro*, for; *prae*, before, or in comparison of; *palam*, openly; *sine*, *absque*, without; *tenus*, until, or up to.
Q. *What Case shall the casual word be, that is joyned with* tenus, *if it be the Plural Number?*
A. It shall be the Genitive Case and set before *tenus*, as *aurium tenus*, up to the ears: *genuum tenus*, up to the knees.
Q. *What are Prepositions turned into, when they be set without their Case?*
A. Into Adverbs, as before said in the Adverbs.

Q. *How*

Q. *How many Prepositions do govern sometimes an Accusative, and sometimes an Ablative Case?*

A. Four; *in*, *sub*, *super*, *subter*, to which you may add *clam* and *procul*.

Q. *When will the Preposition* in *govern an Accusative Case?*

A. When the word *in* is joyned to the sign *to*, or when the Preposition *in* is Latin for *intro*; as *in urbem*, into the City.

Q. *When will the Preposition* in *govern an Ablative Case?*

A. When the word *in* is put without the sign *to*, or when the Preposition *in*, is Latin for *in*; as *in te spes est*, my hope is in thee; *te* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *in*.

Q. *Give an Example of the Preposition* sub, *with an Accusative Case, and also with an Ablative.*

A. *Sub noctem*, a little before night; *noctem* is the Accusative Case governed of the Preposition *sub*; and *sub judice lis est*, the matter is before the Judge: *Judice* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *sub*.

Q. *Give an Example of the Preposition* super, *with an Accusative and also with an Ablative Case.*

A. *Super lapidem*, upon a stone; *lapidem* is the Accusative Case governed of the Preposition *super*: and *sub viridi fronde*, upon a green leaf; *fronde* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *sub*.

Q. *Give an Example of the Preposition* subter, *and an Accusative and an Ablative Case?*

A. *Subter terram*, under the earth; *terram* is the Accusative Case governed of the Preposition *subter*: and *subter aquis*, under the waters; *aquis* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *subter*.

Of an Interjection.

Q. *What is an Interjection?*

A. A part of Speech which betokens a ſudden Paſſion of the mind, under an imperfect Voice.

Q. *How is an Interjection uſed?*

A. It is commonly put between other words (from whence alſo it hath its name:) There are but few proper Interjections, but any other word or words paſſionately interlaced in a Sentence, may ſtand for an Interjection.

Q. *Which be Interjections of mirth?*

A. Evax, ha brave; *vah*, ho.

Q. *Which be Interjections of Sorrow?*

A. Heu, alas; *hei*, alas.

Q. *What Interjection is of Dread?*

A. Atat, aha.

Q. *What of marvelling?*

A. Papæ, O ſtrange!

Q. *What of diſdaining?*

A. Hem, oh; *vah*, away.

Q. *What of ſhunning?*

A. Apage, be gone.

Q. *Of praiſing?*

A. Euge, well done.

Q. *What of ſcorning?*

A. Hui, whoo.

Q. *What of Exclamation?*

A. Proh, o; *proh fidem*, O the Faith.

Q. *What of curſing?*

A. Væ, wo; *malum*, with miſchief.

Q. *Which be Interjections of laughing?*

A. Ha, ha, he.

Q. *What of calling?*

A. Eho, ſoho; *ô* ho; *io*, come hither.

Q. *What Interjection is of ſilence?*

A. Au, whiſt, &c.

Of the Concords.

Q. *HOw many Concords are there in Latin Speech, for the due joyning of words in Construction?*

A. Three.

Q. *What is the first Concord between?*

A. The first Concord is between the Nominative Case and the Verb.

Q. *What is the second Concord between?*

A. The second Concord is between the Substantive and the Adjective.

Q. *What is the third Concord between?*

A. The third Concord is between the Antecedent and the Relative.

The first Concord.

Q. *WHat must you do, when you have an English given to be made in Latin?*

A. I must look out the Principal Verb.

Q. *How if there be more Verbs than one in a Sentence, which then is the Principal Verb?*

A. The first is the principal Verb, except it be the Infinitive Mood, or have before it a Relative, as *that, whom, which,* or a Conjunction, as *ut,* that; *cum,* when; *si,* if; and such others.

Q. *What must you do when you have found the Verb?*

A. I must ask the question, *who* or *what?*

Q. *And what is that word that answereth to the question* who *or* what?

A. The word that answereth to the question *who* or *what,* shall be the Nominative Case to the Verb.

Q. *But how if the Verb be a Verb Impersonal?*

A. Then it will have no Nominative Case.

Q. *How*

Q. *How ſhall the Nominative Caſe be ſet in making and conſtruing of Latin.*

A. Before the Verb generally.

Q. *When is the Nominative Caſe ſet after the Verb, or after the ſign of the Verb?*

A. 1. When a queſtion is asked, as *amas tu?* loveſt thou? *venitne Rex?* doth the King come? *tu* is the Nominative Caſe ſet after the Verb *amas*, and *Rex* is the Nominative Caſe ſet after the Verb *venit*. 2. When the Verb is the Imperative Mood, as *ama tu*, love thou, *amato ille*, let him love; *tu* is the Nominative Caſe ſet after the Verb *ama*, and *ille* is the Nominative Caſe ſet after the Verb *amato*. 3 When the ſign (*it*) or (*there*) cometh before the Engliſh of the Verb, as *eſt Liber meus*, *it* is my Book; *venit ad me quidam*, *there* came one to me: *Liber* is the Nominative Caſe ſet after the Verb *eſt*, and *quidam* is the Nominative Caſe ſet after the Verb *venit*.

Q. *What Caſe muſt that word be, which cometh next after the Verb, and anſwereth to the queſtion* whom *or* what?

A. It ſhall commonly be the Accuſative Caſe.

Q. *When ſhall it be any other Caſe?*

A. When the Verb properly governeth another Caſe.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. *Si cupis placere Magiſtro*, if thou covet to pleaſe thy Maſter; *utere diligentia*, uſe diligence: *Magiſtro* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *placere*; and *diligentiâ* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *utere*.

Q. *How doth a Verb Perſonal agree with his Nominative Caſe?*

A. A Verb Perſonal agrees with his Nominative Caſe in the ſame Number and in the ſame Perſon.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. *Præceptor legit*, the Maſter readeth; *legit* is the Verb perſonal, agrees with the Nominative Caſe *Præceptor* in the ſame Number, and in the ſame Perſon.

Q. *How*

Q. *How do you know that* Præceptor *is the Nominative Case, with which the Verb* legit *agreeth?*

A. Becauſe it anſwereth to the queſtion *who* or *what*.

Q. *Make it plain.*

A. *Præceptor legit*, the Maſter readeth. Who readeth? The anſwer is, the Maſter readeth; whereby I know that *Præceptor* is the Nominative Caſe, with which the Verb *legit* agrees.

Q. *How do you know that* Præceptor *is the third Perſon?*

A. Becauſe it is a Noun, for all Nouns, Pronouns and Participles are of the third Perſon, except *ego* and *tu*.

Q. *Which of the Perſons is moſt worthy?*

A. The firſt Perſon is more worthy than the ſecond or the third; and the ſecond Perſon is more worthy than the third.

Q. *Is it needful to know which of the Perſons is moſt, leſs, or leaſt worthy?*

A. Yes; becauſe when two Nominative Caſes Singular of diverſe Perſons, come together, with a Conjunction Copulative between them, the Verb muſt be put in the Plural Number, and becauſe it cannot be put in both Perſons, it muſt be put in the moſt worthy Perſon.

Q. *Declare it more plainly by an Example.*

A. When the Nominative Caſes are one of the firſt Perſon, and the other of the ſecond, the Verb muſt be put in the firſt Perſon, becauſe the firſt Perſon is moſt worthy; as *ego & tu ſumus in tuto*, I and thou be in ſafety: the Verb *ſumus* is put in the firſt Perſon, becauſe it is moſt worthy.

How the Verb doth further agree with his Nominative Caſe, or with that which is put inſtead thereof, I refer you to *Syntaxis* explained.

The ſecond Concord.

Q. *What doth the Adjective agree with?*

A. The Subſtantive, in the ſame Caſe, the ſame Gender, and the ſame Number.

Q.

Q. *When you have an Adjective, what must you do to find the Substantive with which it agrees?*

A. I must ask this question, *who* or *what*? and that word that answereth to the question *who* or *what*, is the Substantive with which the Adjective must agree.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. Amicus certus in re incerta cernitur, a sure Friend is tryed in a doubtful matter: *Certus* is the Adjective agrees with the Substantive *amicus*.

Q. *How do you know that the Adjective* certus *agrees with the Substantive* amicus?

A. Because *amicus*, a Friend, answereth to the question *who* or *what*; as, a sure Friend, a sure *what*? the answer is, a sure Friend.

Q. *Which of the Genders is most worthy?*

A. The Masculine Gender is more worthy than the Feminine or Neuter, and the Feminine Gender is more worthy than the Neuter.

Q. *When two Substantives Singular come together, with a Conjunction Copulative between them of divers Genders, how must the Adjective be put?*

A. In the Plural Number, and in the most worthy Gender.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. Rex & Regina beati, the King and the Queen are blessed: *Rex* and *Regina* are two Substantives Singular; *beati* is the Adjective Plural put in the Masculine Gender, because *Rex* is of the Masculine Gender, which is the most worthy.

The

The third Concord.

Q. *What doth the Relative agree with?*

A. With the Antecedent, in Gender, Number and Perſon.

Q. *When you have a Relative, what muſt you do to find the Antecedent with which it muſt agree?*

A. I muſt ask the queſtion *who* or *what?* and the word which anſwereth to the queſtion, is the Antecedent with which the Antecedent muſt agree.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. Vir ſapit qui pauca loquitur, the Man is wiſe that ſpeaketh few words: *Qui* is the Relative agrees with the Antecedent *vir*, in Number and Perſon.

Q. *How do you know that* qui *agrees with the Antecedent* vir?

A. Becauſe *vir* the Man, anſwers to the queſtion *who* or *what?* as the Man is wiſe which, *&c.* who is wiſe which, *&c.* the anſwer is, the Man.

The Second Part OF *Fundamenta Grammatices* EXPLAINED.

Propria quæ maribus examined and made Plain.

Propria quæ maribus.

Q. *How many kinds of proper Names belong to the Maſculine Gender?*

A. Five; 1. Of Heatheniſh Gods, as *Mars*, *Bacchus*, *Apollo*. 2. Of Men, as *Cato*, *Virgilius*. 3. Of Rivers, as *Tibris*, *Orontes*. 4. Of Months, as *Octo-ber*. 5. Of Winds, as *Lybs*, *Notus*, *Auſter*.

Propria fœminæum.

Q. *How many kinds of proper Names belong to the Feminine Gender?*

A. Five; 1. Of Heatheniſh Goddeſſes, as *Juno*, *Venus*. 2. Of Women, as *Anna*, *Phylotis*. 3. Of Cities, as *Elis*, *Opus*. 4. Of Countries, as *Græcia*, *Perſis*. 5. Of Iſlands, as *Creta*, *Britannia*, *Cyprus*.

Q. *Are all Names of Cities of the Feminine Gender?*

A. No; ſome are of the Maſculine, ſome of the Neuter Gender, and one both of the Maſculine and Neuter Gender.

Q. *Give*

Q. *Give the several Examples.*

A. These words *Sulmo*, *Agragas* and *Hispa* (being names of Cities) though they should be of the Feminine Gender by *Propria fœmineum*, yet they shall be of the Masculine, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Excipienda tamen.

These five words, *Argos*, *Tibur*, *Præneste*, *Reate* and *Cære*, (being names of Cities also) tho they should be of the Feminine Gender by *Propria fœmineum*, yet they shall be of the Neuter, by virtue of this particular exception.

Quædam neutralia.

This one word *Anxur*, being the name of a City, tho it should be of the Feminine Gender by *Propria fœmineum*, yet it shall be both Masculine and Neuter, by this particular Exception.

Et genus Anxur.

Q. *How many general Rules are there for common Names?*

A. Four.

Q. *Which is the first?*

A. The common Names of Trees shall be of the Feminine Gender; as *alnus*, *cupressus*, *cedrus*, by this Rule *Appellativa arborum.*

Appellativa arborum.

Q. *Are all Names of Trees of the Feminine Gender?*

A. No; except this one word *spinus*, and words ending in *aster*, that are common Names of Trees; as *oleaster*, tho they should be of the Feminine Gender by *Appellativa arborum*; yet they shall be of the Masculine by this particular Exception.

Mas spinus mas oleaster.

Except also these five words, *siler*, *thus*, *robur* and *acer*, being Names of Trees, tho they should be of the Feminine Gender, by *Appellativa arborum*; yet they shall be of the Neuter by this particular Exception.

Et sunt neutra siler.

Q.

Q. *What is the second general Rule for common Names?*

A. The Names of Birds, as *passer*, *hirundo*; the Names of wild Beasts; as *tygris*, *vulpes*, the Names of Fishes; as *ostrea*, *cetus*, are of the Epicene Gender by this Rule, *Sunt etiam volucrum*. *Sunt etiam volucrum.*

Q. *What is the third general Rule for common Names?*

A. All Noun Substantives, whether they be Greek or Latin, Proper or Common, that end in *um*, in the Nominative Case Singular, are of the Neuter Gender, except they be Names of Men or Women. *Omne quod exit in* um.

Q. *What is the fourth general Rule for common Names?*

A. All Nouns Substantives that are invariable or undeclined, shall be of the Neuter Gender. *Sic invariabile nomen.*

Finis Regularum Generalium Appellativorum.

Q. *HOw many special Rules are there?*

A. There be three special Rules.

Q. *Which is the first special Rule?*

A. *Nomen non crescens Genitivo*, &c.

Q. *What is the meaning of the first special Rule?*

A. Nouns not encreasing in the Genitive Case Singular, that is, having no more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular, than they have in the Nominative, shall be of the Feminine Gender by the first special Rule, *Nomen non crescens*; as, *hæc caro*, Gen. *hujus carnis*, &c. *Nomen non crescens.*

Q. *Are all Nouns of the Feminine Gender, that have no more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular, than they have in the Nominative?*

A. No; there are some of the Masculine, some of the Neuter, some of the Doubtful, and some of the Common two Genders.

Q. *What*

Q. What Nouns be of the Masculine Gender, that do not increase in the Genitive Case Singular?

Mascula nomina in a.

A. All words ending in *a*, belonging to the first special Rule, that is, not encreasing in the Genitive Case Singular, signifying the Office or Trade of a Man, shall be of the Masculine Gender by this Exception, *Mascula nomina in* a, as *hic scriba*, a Secretary; *hic Assecla*, a Page, &c.

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. The word must end in *a*: 2. It must signifie the Office or Trade of a Man: And 3. it must belong to the first special Rule.

Fundit in as & in es.

All words also ending in *as*, or in *es*, coming from the first Declension of the Greeks, and those that are derived from them ending in *a*, as *satrapas*, *satrapa*; *athletes*, *athleta*; shall be of the Masculine Gender excepted from the first special Rule, by virtue of this particular Exception, *Mascula Græcorum.*

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It must end in *as*, or in *es*: 2. It must be derived from a Greek Noun: 3. It must belong to the first special Rules.

Q. *Are there any more Nouns (belonging to the first special Rule) of the Masculine Gender?*

Mascula item verres.

A. Yes, these three words, *verres*, *natalis* and *aqualis*, belonging to the first special Rule, shall be of the Masculine Gender by virtue of this Exception.

Ab asse nata.

As also words derived from *as*, a pound weight, as *Centussis*, &c. though they should be of the Feminine Gender by the first special Rule, yet they shall be of the Masculine, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. H

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Exception?*

A. Two: 1. It muſt belong to the firſt Special: It muſt be derived from *as*, ſignifying a pound weight.

Alſo theſe twenty four words, *lienis*, *callis*, *caulis*, *dolis*, *follis*, *menſis*, *enſis*, *fuſtis*, *funis*, *panis*, *penis*, *crinis*, *cassis*, *fascis*, *torris*, *sentis*, *piscis*, *unguis*, *vermis*, *vectis*, *postis* and *axis*; not encreaſing in the Genitive Caſe Singular, ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Conjunge lienis & orbis.*

Alſo all words ending in *er*, as *venter*; in *os*, as *logos*; in *us*, as *annus*; belonging to the firſt ſpecial Rule, ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Maſcula in* er, *ſeu venter*, &c.

Q. *But are all words that end in* er, *os*, or *us*, *belonging to the firſt Special Rule, of the Maſculine Gender?*

A. No; theſe fifteen words, *mater*, *humus*, *domus*, *alvus*, &c. tho they end in *er*, *os*, *us*, and belong to the firſt ſpecial Rule, they ſhall be of the Feminine Gender by this Rule; excepted from the Rule *Maſcula*. *Fœminei generis ſunt.*

Alſo all words belonging to the firſt ſpecial Rule ending in *os* in the Greek, and in *us* in the Latin, as *papirus*, *antidotus*, and many others, though they ſhould be of the Maſculine Gender by *Maſcula in er*, yet they ſhall be of the Feminine by this particular Exception. *His jungas* OS *in* US.

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Exception?*

A. Three: 1. It muſt belong to the firſt ſpecial Rule: 2. It muſt end in *os* in the Greek: And 3. It muſt end in *us* in the Latin.

Q. *What Nouns be of the Neuter Gender, that do not increase in the Genitive Case Singular?*

Neutrum nomen in e.

A. Words that end in *e*, and make *is*, in the Genitive Case Singular, not encreasing as *mare*, Genitivo *maris*; *rete*, Genitivo *retis*, shall be of the Neuter Gender, excepted from the first special Rule, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *How many things are required, to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It must belong to the first special Rule: 2. It must end in *e* in the Nominative Case: And 3. It must make *is* in the Genitive Case.

Et quot in on *vel in* um.

Also all words that end in *on*, or in *um*, as *barbiton*, *barbitum*, not encreasing in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this rule?*

A. Two: 1. It must belong to the first special Rule: 2. It must end in *on*, or in *um*, in the Nominative Case Singular.

Est neutrum bryppomanes.

Also these two words *bryppomanes* and *cacoethes*, belonging to the first special Rule, shall be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Et virus, pelagus.

Also these two words, *virus* and *pelagus*, belonging to the first special Rule, tho they should be of the Masculine Gender, by *Masculа in er*, yet they shall be of the Neuter, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Neutrum modo, mas modo vulgus.

This word *vulgus*, belonging to the second special Rule, tho it should be of the Masculine Gender only, by *Masculа in er*, yet it shall be both Masculine and Neuter, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *What*

Q. *What Nouns be of the Doubtful Gender, that do not increaſe in the Genitive Caſe Singular?*

A. Theſe words, *talpa*, *dama*, *chamalis*, *halcionis*, *finis*, *clunis*, *reſtis*, *amnis*, *corbis*, *torquis* and *anguis*, belonging to the firſt ſpecial Rule, tho they ſhould be of the Feminine Gender, by *Nomen non creſcens*, yet they ſhall be of the Doubtful Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Incerti generis ſunt talpa.*

Halcionis is ſcarcely read in the Nominative Caſe, but *Halcion*, and belongs to the third ſpecial Rule.

Alſo theſe words, *penus*, *linter*, *ſpecus*, (and *ficus* when it ſignifies a Diſeaſe) *phacelus*, *lecythus*, *atomus*, *ſparus* and *paradiſus*, belonging to the firſt ſpecial Rule, tho they ſhould be of the Maſculine Gender, by *Maſcula* in *er*, yet they ſhall be of the Doubtful, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *What Nouns are of the Common of two Genders, that do not encreaſe in the Genitive Caſe Singular?*

A. All words ending in *a*, belonging to the firſt ſpecial Rule, compounded of a Verb, as *grajugena*, of *gigno*; *agricola*, of *colo*, &c. ſhall be of the Common of two Genders; by this particular Exception. *Compoſitum à verbo dans a.*

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It muſt belong to the firſt ſpecial Rule: It muſt end in *a*: And 3. It muſt be compounded of a Verb. But *puerpera*, compounded of *puer* and *pario*, is the Feminine Gender only.

Alſo theſe fourteen words, *ſenex*, *auriga*, *verna*, &c. tho they ſhould be of the Feminine Gender, by *Nomen non creſcens*, yet they ſhall be of the Common of Two, by Virtue of this particular Exception. *Adde ſenex auriga.*

Q. *Tell me certainly how to know when a Noun belongs to the first special Rule?*

A. When it doth not increase in the Genitive Case Singular, that is, when a Noun hath no more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular, than it hath in the Nominative.

Finis Regularum ad Primam Regulam Specialem Pertinentium.

Of the second Special Rule.

Q. *Which is the second special Rule?*

A. Nomen crescentis penultima si Genitivi syllaba acuta sonat, &c.

Q. *What is the meaning of the second special Rule?*

A. Nouns encreasing long in the last Syllable save one of the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Feminine Gender by the second special Rule, *Nomen crescentis,* &c. *syllaba acuta;* as *hæc pietas,* Gen. *hujus pietatis.*

Q. *Why do you say,* Nomen crescentis, *&c.* syllaba acuta?

A. To distinguish it from the third special Rule, which begins like the second.

Q. *What do you mean by encreasing in the Genitive Case Singular?*

A. When there are more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular, than there are in the Nominative.

1. 2. 3. 1. 2. 3. 4.

as —— *pi—e—tas,* Gen. *pi—e—ta—tis,* &c.

Q. *What do you mean by encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular?*

A. When the last Syllable save one, in the Genitive Case Singular is pronounced long, as *pietas,* Gen. *pietātis; virtus,* Gen. *vir-tū-tis,* &c.

Q. *Are*

Q. *Are all Nouns of the Feminine Gender, that encreaſe long in the Genitive Caſe Singular?*

A. No; ſome Nouns encreaſing long in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſes Singular, are of the Maſculine Gender, ſome of the Neuter, ſome of the Doubtful, and ſome of the Common of two Genders.

Q. *What Nouns that encreaſe long in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular, are of the Maſculine Gender?*

A. Theſe thirty words, *ſal, ſol, ren, ſplen, Car, cer, vir,* &c. of one Syllable, belonging to the ſecond ſpecial Rule, that is, encreaſing long in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular, ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender by virtue of this particular Exception. *Maſcula dicuntur monoſyllaba.*

Alſo all words ending in *n*, that have more Syllables than one in the Nominative Caſe Singular, encreaſing long in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular, ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender by this particular Exception. *Maſcula ſunt etiam.*

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It muſt end in *n*: 2. It muſt have more than one Syllable in the Nominative Caſe: And 3. It muſt belong to the ſecond ſpecial Rule.

Alſo all words ending in *o*, ſignifying a Body, as *leo, curculio,* &c. encreaſing long in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular, ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Et in* O, *ſignantia corpus.*

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It muſt end in *o*: 2. It muſt ſignifie a Body: And 3. It muſt belong to the ſecond ſpecial Rule.

Sic ſenio, ternio, ſermo.

Theſe three words alſo, *ſenio*, *ternio*, *ſermo*, belonging to the ſecond ſpecial Rule, ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *Are any other Nouns that encreaſe long in the laſt Syllable ſave one of the Genitive Caſe Singular, of the Maſculine Gender?*

Maſcula in er, or & os.

A. Yes, Nouns that end in *er*, *or*, or *os*, having more than one Syllable in the Nominative Caſe Singular, belonging to the ſecond ſpecial Rule, tho they ſhould be of the Feminine Gender by *Nomen creſcentis*, &c. *Syllaba acuta*; yet they ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It muſt end in *er*, *or*, or *os*, as *crater*, *conditor*, *heros*: 2. It muſt have more than one Syllable in the Nominative Caſe Singular: And 3. It muſt belong to the ſecond ſpecial Rule.

Sic torrens, nefrens, oriens, &c.

Alſo theſe three words, *torrens*, *nefrens*, *oriens*; and all words compounded of *dens*, a Tooth; as *bidens*, encreaſing long in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular, ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender, excepted from the ſecond ſpecial Rule, *Nomen creſcentis*.

Adde gigas, Elephas, &c.

Alſo theſe Nouns, *gigas*, *elephas*, *adamas*, *garamas*, *tapes*, *lebes*, *cures*, *magnes*, (and *meridies*, of the fifth Declenſion) belonging to the ſecond ſpecial Rule, ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Et quæ componantur ab aſſe.

Alſo all Nouns compounded of *as*, a pound weight, as *dodrans*, *ſemis*, &c. belonging to the ſecond ſpecial Rule, ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. How

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It must be compounded of *as*, a pound weight: 2. It must signifie part of a pound: And 3. It must belong to the second special Rule.

Also these seven words, *ſamnis*, *hydrops*, *vilicorax*, *thorax*, *vervex*, *phœnix* and *lombix*, encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Masculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Jungantur Maſcula ſamnis.*

Q. *But are all Nouns ending in* n, *in* er, *and in* or, *of the Maſculine Gender?*

A. No; these words *Syren*, * *mulier*, *ſoror* and *uxor*, ending in *n*, *er*, and *or*, tho they should be of the Masculine Gender, by *polyſyllaba* in *n*, and *Maſcula* in *er*, *or* & *os*; yet they shall be of the Feminine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Sunt muliebre genus.*

* But the word *mulier* is rather of the third special Rule.

Q. *What Nouns encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Neuter Gender?*

A. These fifteen words, *mel*, *fel*, *lac*, &c. encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Neuter Gender, excepted from the second special Rule, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Sunt neutralia & hæc Monoſyllaba.*

All words of more than one Syllable in the Nominative Case Singular ending in *al*, or in *ar*, as *capital*, *laquear*, belonging to the second special Rule, shall be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Et in* al, *polyſyllaba in* ar, q.

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It must have more than one Syllable in the Nominative Case Singular: 2. It must end

in *al*, or in *ar*: And 3. It must belong to the second special Rule.

Neutrum halec & muliebre.

This word *halec*, belonging to the second special Rule, tho it should be of the Feminine Gender only, by *Nomen crucentis*, yet it shall be both Feminine and Neuter in the Singular Number, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *What Nouns that encrease long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Doubtful Gender?*

Sunt dubia hæc python.

A. These twelve words, *python, scrofa, serpens*, &c. encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, tho they should be of the Feminine Gender by the second special Rule, yet they shall be of the Doubtful, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Adde dies numero.

This word *dies*, tho it be of the Doubtful Gender in the Singular Number, by — *Sunt dubia hæc python*; yet it shall be only Masculine in the Plural Number, by this Rule — *Adde dies numero.*

Q. *What Nouns, that encrease long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Common of two Genders?*

Sunt communes parens, &c.

A. These thirteen words, *parens, auctor, infans, adolescens*, &c. and *frons*, a forehead, with all its Compounds; as *bifrons*, &c. belonging to the second special Rule, shall be of the Common of two Genders, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *Tell me how I may certainly know when a word belongs to the second special Rule?*

A. When the Word or Noun encreaseth long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, that is when there are more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular than there are in the Nominative, and the

laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular is pronounced long.

Finis Regularum ad ſecundum Regulam Specialem pertinentium.

Of the third Special Rule.

Q. *WHich is the third ſpecial Rule?*

A. Nomen creſcentis penultima ſi Genitivi ſit gravis, ut ſanguis.

Q. *What is the meaning of the third ſpecial Rule?*

A. Nouns encreaſing ſhort in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular, ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender by the third ſpecial Rule—*Nomen creſcentis*, &c. *Syllaba acuta*, &c. as *hic ſanguis*, Gen *ſanguinis.*

Q. *Why do you ſay* Nomen creſcentis, *&c.* Syllaba acuta, *&c.*

A. To diſtinguiſh it from the ſecond ſpecial Rule, which begins like the third.

Q. *By encreaſing you told me was meant when a Noun hath more Syllables in the Genitive Caſe Singular than it hath in the Nominative; but what do you mean by encreaſing ſhort?*

A. When the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular is pronounced ſhort, as Nom. *hic ſanguis*, Gen. *ſan-gŭi-nis.*

Q. *Are all Nouns, that do encreaſe ſhort in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular of the Maſculine Gender?*

A. No; ſome are of the Feminine, ſome of the Neuter, ſome of the Doubtful, and ſome of the Common of two Genders.

Q. *What Nouns that encreaſe ſhort in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular, are of the Feminine Gender?*

Fœminei generis ſit hyperdiſſyllabon in do, *&c.*

A. All words that end in *do*, making *dinis*, in the Genitive Caſe Singular, and Nouns that end in *go*, making *ginis*, in the Genitive Caſe Singular, having more than two Syllables in the Nominative Caſe Singular, encreaſing ſhort in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Singular, ſhall be of the Feminine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It muſt end in *do*, or in *go*, in the Nominative Caſe Singular, and make *dinis*, or *ginis*, in the Genitive Caſe Singular. 2. It muſt have more than two Syllables in the Nominative Caſe Singular: 3. It muſt belong to the third ſpecial Rule.

Adjice virgo, &c.

Theſe thirteen words, *virgo*, *grando*, *ſidus*, &c. encreaſing ſhort in the laſt Syllable ſave one in the Genitive Caſe Singular, ſhall be of the Feminine Gender alſo, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Græcula in as, *vel in* is.

Alſo all Greek Nouns ending in *as*, or in *is*, that make *ădis*, or *ĭdis*, in the Genitive Caſe Singular, as *lampas*, Gen. *hujus lampadis*; *jaſpis*, Gen. *hujus jaſpidis*, belonging to the third ſpecial Rule, tho they ſhould be of the Maſculine Gender, by the third ſpecial Rule, yet they ſhall be of the Feminine by this particular Exception.

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It muſt be a Greek Noun, and end in *as*, or in *is*, in the Nominative Caſe Singular: 2. It muſt end in *adis*, or *idis*, in the Genitive Caſe Singular: 3. It muſt belong to the third ſpecial Rule.

This

This word *pecus*, belonging to the third special Rule, and making *pecudis*, in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Feminine Gender, by this particular Exception. *Vox una pecus.*

Also these eight words, *forfex*, *pellex*, *carex*, *supellex*, &c. encreasing short in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Feminine Gender by this particular Exception. *His forfex, pellex, &c.*

Q. *What Nouns that encrease short in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Neuter Gender?*

A. All Nouns signifying a thing without Life, belonging to the third special Rule, ending in *a*, as *problema*; in *n*, as *omen*; in *r*, as *jubar*; in *ur*, as *fecur*; in *us*, as *onus*; or in *put*, as *occiput*; shall be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Est Neutrale genus.*

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Three: 1. It must signifie a thing without Life: 2. It must belong to the third special Rule: And 3. It must end either in *a*, *en*, *ar*, *ur*, *us*, or *put*.

But these two words *pecten* and *furfur*, tho they should be of the Neuter Gender, by *Est Neutrale genus*, yet they shall be of the Masculine, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Masculi sunt pecten, furfur.*

These thirteen words, *cadaver*, *verber*, &c. encreasing short in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall also be of the Neuter Gender, excepted from the third special Rule, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Sunt neutra cadaver.*

These three words, *æquor*, *marmor*, *ador*, belonging to the third special Rule, shall also be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception. *Neutra æquor, marmor.*

The

Atque pecus. The word *pecus*, belonging to the third special Rule, and making *pecoris* in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *What Nouns encreasing short in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Doubtful Gender?*

Sunt dubii generis, cardo, margo, &c. These fifteen words, *cardo, margo, cinis*, &c. belonging to the third special Rule, tho they should be of the Masculine Gender by the second special Rule; yet they shall be of the Doubtful, by this particular Exception.

Q. *What Nouns that do increase short in the last Syllable save one, in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Common of two Gender?*

Communis generis sunt ista. A. These twenty two words, *vigil, pugil, exul*, &c. encreasing short in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular tho they should be of the Masculine Gender by the third special Rule, yet they shall be of the Common of two, by this particular Exception.

Atque alia à verbis. Also all Nouns derived from Verbs, belonging to the third special Rule, shall be of the Common of two Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. *How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?*

A. Two: 1. It must be derived of a Verb: And 2. It must belong to the third special Rule.

Q. *How may I know certainly when a word belongs to the third special Rule?*

A When there are more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular than there are in the Nominative, and when the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Singular is pronounced long.

Finis Regularum quæ ad Tertiam Regulam Specialem pertinent.

Of

Of Adjectives.

Q. *WHat Gender are all Nouns Adjectives of, which have but one ending in the Nominative Case Singular?* *Adjectiva unam.*

A. Adjectives that have but one ending in the Nominative Case Singular, shall be both Masculine, Feminine and Neuter Genders, so that all the Genders are comprehended under that one ending; as Nom. *hic, hæc & hoc felix*; *hic, hæc & hoc audax*, &c.

Q. *But how if Adjectives have two endings in the Nominative Case Singular?*

A. Then the first ending shall be of the Common of two Gender, and the second shall be Neuter, as *hic & hæc omnis, & hoc omne.* *Sub gemina voce.*

Q. *When a Noun Adjective hath three endings, in the Nominative Case Singular, what Gender shall those endings be of?*

A. The first of those three endings shall be the Masculine, the second Feminine, and the third ending the Neuter Gender, *At si tres variant voces.*

1. 2. 3.
sacer, sacra, sacrum.

Q. *What Nouns Adjectives have a different declining from all others in the Nominative and Vocative Cases Singular?*

A. These nine words, *pauper, puber*, &c. are Adjectives by signification, but Substantives by Declension. *At sunt quæ flexu.*

A. These eleven words, *campester, volucer*, &c. as—Sing. Nom. *hic campester, hæc campestris, hoc campestre*; or *hic & hæc campestris, & hoc campestre*; and so of the rest. *Hæc proprium quendam.*

AN Alphabetical Index Of all the Words belonging to the ſeveral Rules IN *Propria quæ Maribus*:

With the Article or Articles wherewith they are declined; with the ending of the Genitive Caſes Singular.

I Have not ſet down the Declenſion, preſuming that the ingenious Youth will know that, by the ending of the Genitive Caſe Singular, for when the Genitive ends in *æ*, that Noun is of the firſt Declenſion; if the Genitive ends in *i*, then 'tis of the ſecond; if it ends in *is*, 'tis of the third; if in *us*, 'tis of the fourth; and if in *ei*, then 'tis of the fifth Declenſion.

A.

A Byſſus, ſi; *hæc.*
acer, cris; *hoc.*
Acus, cus; *hæc.*
Adamas, ntis; *hic.*
Adeps, ĭpis; *hic vel hæc.*
Adoleſcens, tis; *hic & hæc.*
Ador, ŏris; *hoc.*
Advena, æ; *hic & hæc.*
æquor, ŏris; *hoc.*
æs, æris; *hoc.*

affinis, nis ; hic vel hæc.
Agragas, ntis ; hic.
agricola, æ ; hic & hæc.
ales, ĭtis ; hic & hæc.
almus, mi ; hæc.
alvus, alvi ; hæc.
Amazon, ōnis ; hæc.
amnis, is ; hic vel hæc.
anas, ătis ; hic vel hæc.
anguis, is ; hic vel hæc.
Anna, æ ; hæc.
annus, ni ; hic.
antidotus, ti ; hæc.
antistes, titis ; hic & hæc.
anus, nus ; hæc.
Anxur, ŭris ; hic aut hoc.
Apollo, ĭnis ; hic.
appendix, ĭcis ; hæc.
aqualis, is ; hic.
arbor, ŏris ; hæc.
Acarnan, ānis ; hic.
Arcas, ădis ; hic & hæc.
arctos, ti ; hæc.
Argos, gi ; hoc.
aruspex, ĭcis ; hic & hæc.
assis ; hic.
assecla, æ ; hic.
athleta, æ ; hic.
athletes, æ ; hic.
axonus, i ; hic vel hæc.
auceps, cŭpis ; hic & hæc.
audax, dăcis ; hic, hæc & hoc, n. ad. 3. Articles,
augur, gŭris ; hic & hæc.
auriga, gæ ; hic & hæc.
Auster, tri ; hic.
author, thŏris ; hic & hæc.
axis, is ; hic.

B.

Bacchar, chăris ; hæc.
Bacchus, chi ; hic.
barbiton, ti ; hoc.
bes, bessis ; hic.
bidens, entis ; hic.
bifrons, ontis ; hic & hæc.
byssus, si ; hæc.
bombyx, bĭcis ; hic.
bos, vis ; hic & hæc.
Britannia, æ ; hæc.
bubo, ōnis ; hic vel hæc.

C.

Cacoethes, this ; hoc.
cadaver, veris ; hoc.
calx, cis ; hic vel hæc.
callis, lis ; hic.
canalis, lis ; hic vel hæc.
canis, nis ; hic & hæc.
capital, lis ; hoc.
capra, æ ; hæc.
Car, caris ; hic.
caro, nis ; hæc.
cardo, dĭnis ; hic vel hæc.
carex, rĭcis ; hæc.
cassis, sis ; hic.
cassis, ădis ; da, ac. hæc.
Cato, tōnis ; hic.
caulis, lis ; hic.
cedrus, dri ; hæc.
centussis, sis ; hic.
cetus, ti ; hic.
cicer, ĕris ; hoc.
cinis, ĕris ; hic vel hæc.

civis

civis, vis; hic & hæc.
clunis, nis; hic vel hæc.
collis, collis; hic.
colus, li, & lus; hæc.
comes, ĭtis; hic & hæc.
compago, gĭnis; hæc.
conditor, ōris; hic.
conjux, jŭgis; hic & hæc.
cor, cordis; hoc.
corbis, bis; hic vel hæc.
coſtus, ti; hæc.
coxendix, icis; hæc.
crater, ēris; hic.
Creta, æ; hæc.
Cres, tis; hic.
crinis, nis; hic.
crus, ris; hoc.
criſtallus, li; hæc.
culex, ĭcis; hic vel hæc.
cupreſſus, ſi; hæc.
curculio, ōnis; hic.
Cures, ētis; hic.
cuſpis, ĭdis; hæc.
cuſtos, ōdis; hic & hæc.
Cyprus, ri; hæc.

D.

Dama, æ; hic vel hæc.
delphin, ĭnis; hic.
dies, ēi; hic vel hæc.
diphthongus, gi; hæc.
dodrans, antis; hic.
domus, i, & us; hæc.
dulcedo dinis; hæc.
dux, ducis; hic & hæc.

E.

Elephas, ntis; hic.
Elis, ĭdis; hæc.
enſis, ſis; hic.
eques, quĭtis; hic vel hæc.
eremus, mi; hæc.
exlex, lēgis; hic & hæc.
extorris, ris; hic vel hæc.
exul, ŭlis; hic & hæc.

F.

Felix, icis; hic, hæc & hoc: n. Ad. 3. Ar.
far, ris; hoc.
faſcis, is; hic.
fel, fellis; hoc.
ficus, us; hæc.
ficus, ci; hic vel hæc.
fides, dei; hæc.
filex, ĕcis; hæc.
finis, nis; hic vel hæc.
flos, ris; hic.
follis, lis; hic.
fons, ntis; hic.
forceps, ĭpis; hic vel hæc.
forfex, icis; hæc.
fumus, i, s; hic vel hæc.
fur, furis; hic & hæc.
fuſtis, fuſtis; hic.

G.

Garamas, antis; hic.
gigas, gantis; hic.
gingiber, bĕris; hoc.

glis, gliris; hic.
gorgon, ŏnis; hæc.
Grajugena, æ; hic & hæc.
grando, dĭnis; hæc.
Græcia, æ; hæc.
grex, gregis; hic.
grossus, si; hic vel hæc.
grus, gruis; hic vel hæc.

H.

HÆres, ēdis; hic & hæc.
halcyon, ŏnis; hic vel hæc.
heros, rois; hic.
hyems, ĕmis; hæc.
hyppomanes, nis; hoc.
hirundo, dinis; hæc.
hystrix, trĭcis; hæc.
homo, ĭnis; hic & hæc.
hospes, pĭtis; hic & hæc.
hostis, tis; hic & hæc.
humus, mi; hæc.
hydrops, drōpis; hic.

I.

JAspis, pĭdis; hæc.
icon, cŏnis; hæc.
idus, duum; pl. hæ.
ecur, cŏris; hoc.
ignis, nis; hic.
illex, ēgis; hic & hæc.
imbrex, brĭcis; hic vel hæc.
infans, ntis; hic & hæc.
interpres, prĕtis; hic & hæc.
iter, itinēris; hoc.
ibar, ăris; hoc.

judex, ĭcis; hic & hæc.
Juno, ōnis; hæc.
jus, juris; hoc.
juvenis, nis; hic & hæc.

L.

LAc, ctis; hoc.
lacer, cĕris; hoc.
lampas, ădis; hæc.
lanista, æ; hic.
laquear, āris; hoc.
lebes, ētis; hic.
lecythus, thi; hic vel hæc.
leo, ōnis; hic.
Lybs, ibis; hic.
lychen, ēnis; hic.
lyenis, enis; hic.
Lygur, ŭris; hic & hæc.
linter, tris; hic vel hæc.
lixa, æ; hic.
logos, gi; hic.
lymax, ăcis; hic vel hæc.
lynx, cis; hic vel hæc.

M.

MAgnes, ētis; hæc.
manus, nus; hæc.
mare, ris; hoc.
margo, gĭnis; hic vel hæc.
marmor, ŏris; hoc.
Mars, Martis; hic.
Martyr, tyris; hic & hæc.
mas, aris; hic.
mater, tris; hæc.
mel, mellis; hoc.
meridies, diei; hic.

miles,

miles, ĭtis ; hic & hæc.
mons, ntis ; hic.
mos, moris ; hic.
mulier, ĕris ; hæc.
mus, muris ; hic.

N.

Natalis, lis ; hic.
natrix, ĭcis ; hic vel hæc.
nefrens, ntis ; hic.
nycticorax, ăcis ; hic.
Notus, ti ; hic.
nubes, bis ; hæc.
nurus, rus ; hæc.

O.

Obex, bĭcis ; hic vel hæc.
obsæt, vĕdis ; hic & hæc.
occiput, pĭtis ; hoc.
October, bris ; hic.
oleaster, tri ; hic.
omen, mĭnis ; hoc.
omnis, hic & hæc, & omne, hoc, No. ad 3. art.
onyx, nĭcis ; hic vel hæc.
onus, nĕris ; hoc.
opifex, ficis ; hic & hæc.
Opus, opuntis ; hæc.
orbis, bis ; hic.
oriens, entis ; hic.
Orontes, tis ; hic.
os, ossis ; hoc ;
os, oris ; hoc.
ostrea, æ ; hæc.
ovum, i ; hoc.

P.

Pampinus, ni ; hic vel hæc panis, is ; hic.
papaver, ĕris ; hoc.
papyrus, ri ; hæc.
paradisus, si ; hic vel hæc.
parens, entis ; hic & hæc.
passer, ĕris ; hic.
patruelis, lis ; hic & hæc.
pecten, ĭnis ; hic.
pedes, ĭtis ; hic & hæc.
pelagus, gi ; hoc.
pellex, ĭcis ; hæc.
penis, is ; hic.
penus, i, us ; hic vel hæc.
perdix, dĭcis ; hic vel hæc.
perduelis, lis ; hic & hæc.
Persis, ĭdis ; Ac. da. hæc.
pes, dis ; hic.
phaselus, li ; hic vel hæc.
pharus, ri ; hic vel hæc.
phœnix, nĭcis ; hic.
Philotis, ĭdis ; hæc.
Phryx, rygis ; hic.
pietas, tātis ; hæc.
piper, pĕris ; hoc.
piscis, cis ; hic.
pons, tis ; hic.
porticus, ci ; hæc.
postis, tis ; hic.
præses, sĭdis ; hic & hæc.
præsul, sŭlis ; hic & hæc.
Præneste, tis ; Ab. ei.
præs, dis ; hic.

princeps, cĭpis; hic & hæc.
problema, ătis; hoc.
pugil, ĭlis; hic & hæc.
pulvis, vĕris; hic vel hæc.
pumex, ĕcis; hic vel hæc.
pus, pūris; hoc.

R.

Rabula, æ; hic.
ramex, ĕcis; hic vel hæc.
ren, renis; hic.
reſtis, tis; hic.
rete, tis; ab. ti. hoc.
rex, regis; hic.
robur, ŏris; hoc.
ru, is; hic.
rudens, entis; hic vel hæc.
rus, rūris; hoc.

S.

Sacer, cra, crum; N. ad. 3. ter.
ſacerdos, dōtis; hic & hæc.
ſal, ſalis; hic.
Samnis, ĭtis; hic.
ſanguis, ĭnis; hic.
ſapphyrus, ri; hæc.
ſatrapa, æ; hic.
ſatrapas, æ; hic.
ſcrobs, bis; hic vel hæc.
ſcriba, æ; hic.
ſcurra, æ; hic.
ſegus, gĕtis; hæc.
ſemis, miſſis; hic.
ſenex, nis; hic & hæc.
ſenio, ōnis; hic.
ſentis, tis; hic.
ſeps, ptis; hic.
Ser, ſeris; hic.
ſermo, ōnis; hic.
ſerpens, tis; hic vel hæc.
ſiſer, ĕris; hoc.
ſiler, ĕris; hoc.
ſilex, ĭcis; hic vel hæc.
ſocrus, crus; hæc.
ſodalis, lis; hic & hæc.
ſol, ſolis; hic.
ſoror, rŏris; hæc.
ſpecus, ci; hic vel hæc.
ſpinus, ni; hic.
ſplen, enis; hic.
ſtirps, pis; hic vel hæc.
ſuber, ĕris; hoc.
Sulmo, ōnis; hic.
ſupellex, ēctilis; hæc.
ſus, ſuis; hic & hæc.
ſynodus, di; hæc.
ſyren, ēnis; hæc.

T.

Talpa, æ; hic vel hæc.
tapes, ētis; hic.
teges, ētis; hæc.
ternio, ōnis; hic.
teſtis, tis; hic & hæc.
thorax, ācis; hic.
Thrax, acis; hic.
thus, thuris; hoc.
Tybris, bris; hic.
Tybur, uris; hoc.
Tigris, gridis; hæc.
torques, quis; hic vel hæc.

torrens,

torrens, rentis; *hic.*
torris, ris; *hic.*
tribus, us; *hæc.*
Tros, trois; *hic.*
tuber, ĕris; *hoc.*

V.

V Annus, ni; *hæc.*
vas, vadis; *hic.*
vas, vasis; *hoc.*
vates, tis; *hic & hæc.*
uber, ĕris; *hoc.*
vectis, tis; *hic.*
venter, tris; *hic.*
Venus, ĕris; *hæc.*
ver, veris; *hoc.*
verber, bĕris; *hoc.*
verna, æ; *hic & hæc.*
vermis, mis; *hic.*
verres, ris; *hic.*
vervex, vēcis; *hic.*
vigil, gĭlis; *hic & hæc.*
vindex, dĭcis; *hic & hæc.*
vir, viri; *hic.*
Virgilius, lii; *Voc. ô li, hic.*
virgo, gĭnis; *hæc.*
virus, invariab. hoc.
virtus, tūtis; *hæc.*
unguis, guis; *hic.*

QUÆ GENUS

Examined and Explained.

Of Heteroclites.

WHat is an Heteroclite?

A. An Heteroclite is such a Noun that ...th vary or differ from the common manner of de...ning.

Q. How many kinds of Heteroclites are there?

A. Three: 1. Varying or changing their Gender: Deficient or wanting; 3. Redundant or abounding.

Of Heteroclites varying their Genders.

HOw many ways do Heteroclites vary their Gender?

A. Six.

Q. What are the first that vary their Gender?

A. Pergamus and *supellex* are of the ...minine Gender in the Singular Number, 1. *Fem. Sing.* ... of the Neuter in the Plural; as—*hæc* *Neut. Plur.* ...*amus*, Gen. *Pergami*; Plur. Nom. ...*Pergama*, Gen. *horum Pergamorum*; *hæc supellex*, ...; Plur. Nom. *hæc supellectilia, horum, tilium.*

Q. What

Q. *What are the ſecond that vary their Gender?*

A. Theſe four words, *raſtrum, frænum, filum* and *capiſtrum*, tho they are of the Neuter Gender in the Singular Number, yet they ſhall be both Maſculine and Neuter in the Plural, by this Rule—*Dat prior his neutris maſculinum*; as—*hoc raſtrum, tri*; Plur. *hi raſtri & hæc raſtra*; *hoc frænum, ni*; Plur. *hi fræni & hæc frena*; *hoc filum, fili*; Plur. *hi fili & hæc fila*; *hoc capiſtrum, tri*; Plur. *hi capiſtri & hæc capiſtra.*

2. Neut. Sing. Maſc. and Neut. Plur.

Q. *What are the third that vary their Gender?*

A. Theſe two words, *Argos* and *Cælum*, tho they be the Neuter Gender in the Singular Number, yet they ſhall be of the Maſculine Gender only in the Plural, by this Rule,—*Sed audi, Maſcula duntaxat cœlos*, &c. as—*hoc Argos, gi*; Plur. Nom. *hi Argi*; *hoc Cœlum*, Plur. Nom. *hi Cœli.*

3. Neut. Sing. Maſc. Plur.

Q. *What are the fourth that vary their Gender?*

A. Theſe four words, *nundinum, lum, balneum* and *delicium*, tho they be of the Neuter Gender and ſecond Declenſion in the Singular Number, yet they be of the firſt Declenſion and Feminine Gender in the Plural, by this Rule, —*Neutra quidem primo*: as—*nundinum, ni*; Plur. Nom. *hæ nundinæ, narum*; *epulum, li*; Plur. *hæ epulæ, arum*; *hoc balneum*, Plur. *hæ balneæ, arum*; *hoc delicium, cii*; Plur. *deliciæ, arum.*

4. Neut. Sing. Fem. Plur.

Q. *What are the fifth that vary their Gender?*

A. Theſe eight words, *Mænalus, rus, Didymus, Tartara, Taygetus, nera, Maſcica* and *Gargarus*, tho they be the Maſculine Gender in the Singular Number, yet they ſhall be of the Neuter in the Plural Number, by this Rule,—*Hæc maribus dantur*: as *hic Mænalus, li*; Plur. Nom. *hæc Mænala*; Gen. *horum Mænalorum*—and ſo of the reſt.

5. Maſc. ſing. Neut. plur.

Q.

Q. *What are the ſixth that vary their Gender?*

A. Theſe four words, *ſibilus*, *jocus*, and *Avernus*, tho they are of the Maſculine Gender in the Singular Number, they ſhall be both Maſculine and Neuter in the Plural, by this Rule,—*At numerus genus hic dabit*, &c. as—*hic ſibilus*, Gen. *hujus ſibili*, Plur. Nom. *hi ſibili & hæc ſibila*, Gen. *horum ſibilorum*, and ſo of the reſt. *6. Maſc. ſing. Maſc. and Neut. plur.*

2. Of Defective Heterocliteſ.

Wherein are defective Heteroclites defective?

A. In Number or in Caſe.

Q. *What are all Nouns defectives called that vary Caſe?*

A. Aptots.

Q. *Give ſome Examples.*

A. Sing. Nom. *hoc fas*, Gen. *fas*, Dat. *fas*, &c. *hoc nil, per omnes caſus*; that is, all Caſes are alike; *hoc nil, hoc nihil, hoc nihili, per omnes caſus.* *Quæ nullum variant caſum.*

Q. *Are there any more?*

A. Yes; ſome that end in *u*, and in *i*, as *hoc cornu*, *genu*, *per omnes caſus* in Sing. *hoc gummi*, *hoc thuris*; and alſo *Tempe*, *tot* and *quot*, have all the Caſes in the Plural Number, as *hi*, *hæ & hæc Tempe*, *hi*, *hæ & hæc tot*, *hi*, *hæ & hæc quot*.

All Nouns of Number from three to an hundred are called Aptots. *A tribus ad centum.*

Of

Of Monoptots.

Q. WHat are those Nouns called that have but one Case?

A. They are called Monoptots.

Q. Give an Example.

A.

Ablat. *ab hoc*	*noctu.* *natu.* *jussu.*	*injussu.* *astu.* *promptu.* *permissu.*	fourth Declension.

Acc. *Astus* in the Plural Number. *inficias* in the Plural Number.

Of Diptots.

Q. WHat are Nouns called that have but two Cases?

A. They are called Diptots.

Q. Give some Examples.

Sunt Diptota quibus.

A. *Fors, spontis, plus, repetundarum, jugeris, verberis, suppetiæ, tantundem petis* and *vicem.*

Q. Decline those Examples.

A. Nom. *hæc fors.* Abl. *ab hac forte.*
Gen. *hujus spontis.* Abl. *ab hac sponte.*
Nom. *hoc plus.* Gen. *hujus pluris.*
Gen. *harum repetundarum.* Dat. *his repetundis.*
Gen. *hujus jugeris.* Abl. *ab hoc jugere.*
Gen. *hujus verberis.* Abl. *ab hoc verbere.*
Nom. *hæ suppetiæ.* Acc *has suppetias.*
Nom. *hoc tantundem.* Gen. *hujus tantidem.*
Gen. *hujus impetis.* Abl. *ab hoc impete.*
Acc. *hanc vicem,* Abl. *ab hac vice.*

Q

Q. *Are none of these words whole in the Plural Number?*

A. These four, *verberis, vicem, plus* and *opere* are whole in the Plural Number; Plur. Nom. *hæc verbera, rum; hæ vices, cium; hi & hæ plures & hæc plura, rium; hæc jugera, horum jugerum.*

Verberis atq; vicem.

Of Triptots.

Q. *What are Nouns called that have but three Cases in the Singular Number?*

A. Nouns that have but three Cases in the Singular Number are called Triptots.

Tres quibus inflectis casus.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. As,

Sing. Gen. *hujus precis.* Acc. *hanc precem.* Abl. *ab hac prece.* } Plur. *hæ preces*, &c.

Sing. Gen. *hujus opis.* Acc. *hanc opem.* Abl. *ab hac ope.* } Plur. *hæ opes*, &c.

Q. *Have* frugis *and* ditionis *but three Cases in the Singular Number?*

A. *Frugis* and *ditionis* want only the Nominative and Vocative Cases Singular.

At tantum recto frugis.

As—Gen. *hujus frugis.* Dat. *frugi.* Acc. *frugem.* Voc. *caret.* Abl. *ab hac fruge.*

Gen. *hujus ditionis*, &c. Plur. *hæ ditiones*, &c.

Q. *How is the word* vis *declined?*

A. The word *vis* only wants the Dative Case, and is declined as followeth.—Nom. *hæc vis.* Gen. *vis.* Dat. *car.* Acc. *hanc vim.* Voc. *ô vis.* Abl. *ab hac vi.* Plur. *hæ vires*, &c.

Integra vox vis.

Note that the Singular Number is imperfect in all these foregoing words, but the Plural is whole.

Omnibus his mutilus.

Q. *What is the meaning of this Rule*—Quæ referunt, ut qui? *&c.*

Quæ referunt, ut qui.

A. All Relatives, as *qui*; Interrogatives, as *ecquis*; Distributives, as *nullus, neuter, omnis*; and Indefinites, as *quilibet, alter*, with all Pronouns (except *noster, noſtras, meus* and *tu*) do want the Vocative Caſe.

Q. *Decline the words belonging to the Rule?*

A. Nom. *qui, quæ, quod.* Gen. *cujus.* Voc. *caret.*
Nom. *ecquis, quæ, quod.* Gen. *cujus.* Voc. *caret.*
Nom. *nullius, a, um.* Gen. *nullius.* Voc. *caret.*
Nom. *neuter, tra, trum.* Gen. *neutrius.* Voc. *caret.*
Nom. *hic & hæc omnis, & hoc omne.* Voc. *caret.*
Nom. *quilibet, quælibet, quodlibet.* Voc. *caret.*
Nom. *alter, tera, um.* Gen. *alterius.* Voc. *caret.*
Nom. *ego.* Gen. *mei.* Voc. *caret.*

Q. *Decline thoſe four that have the Vocative Caſe?*

A. Nom. *noſter, tra, trum.* Voc. *noſter, tra, trum.*
Nom. *hic & hæc noſtras, & hoc noſtrate.*
Gen. *hujus, atis.* Voc. *ô noſtras & ô noſtrate.*
Nom. *meus, a, um.* Voc. *mi, mea, meum.*
Nom. *tu.* Gen. *tui.* Voc. *ô tu.*

Q. *What is the meaning of the Rule*—Propria cuncta notes? *&c.*

Propria cuncta notes.

A. All proper Names which have a ſtraining nature, do want the Plural Number—as *Mars, Cato, Gallia, Roma, Ida, Tagus, Lelaps, Parnaſſus* and *Buſephalus*.

Q. *Decline thoſe Nouns afore-named?*

A. Singulariter
Nom. *hic Mars.* Gen. *hujus Martis.*
Nom. *hic Cato.* Gen. *Catonis.*
Nom. *hæc Gallia.* Gen. *Galliæ.*
Nom. *hæc Roma.* Gen. *Romæ.*
Nom. *hæc Ida.* Gen. *Idæ.*
Nom. *hic Tagus.* Gen. *Tagi.*
Nom. *hic Lelaps, lăpis.*
Nom. *hic Parnaſſus, Parnaſſi.*
Nom. *hic Buſephalus.* Gen. *Buſephali.*
Plur. car.

Also the Names of Bread-Corn, as Wheat, ... ley; of things sold by weight and mea- ... —As Tow, Wool, Herbs, Wine and ... k: Also the Names of Metals. —As Gold, Silver, ... &c. do want the Plural Number. *His frumenta dabis.*

But there is a time when they have the Plural Number and when not. *Est ubi Plu-ralem.*

Q. *What is the meaning of this Rule*—Hordea, ... forum?

A. These Nouns, *hordea, farra, forum,* ... *mel, mulsum, defruta* and *thus*, are of the ... neuter Gender in the Singular Number, having three ... like Cases only in the Plural. *Hordea, farra, forum.*

Q. *How are those words declined?*

Singular:

Nom. *hoc hordeum.*
Gen. *hujus hordei.*

Nom. *hoc far.*
Gen. *hujus farris.*

Nom. *hoc forum.*
Gen. *hujus fori.*

Nom. *hoc mel.*
Gen. *hujus mellis.*

Nom. *hoc mulsum.*
Gen. *hujus mulsi.*

Nom. *hoc defrutum.*
Gen. *hujus defruti.*

Nom. *hoc thus.*
Gen. *hujus thuris.*

Pluraliter:

Nom. *hæc hordea.*
Acc. *hæc hordea.*
Voc. *ô hordea.*

Nom. *hæc farra.*
Acc. *hæc farra.*
Voc. *ô farra.*

Nom. *hæc fora.*
Acc. *hæc fora.*
Voc. *ô fora.*

Nom. *hæc mella.*
Acc. *hæc mella.*
Voc. *ô mella.*

Nom. *hæc mulsa.*
Acc. *hæc mulsa.*
Voc. *ô mulsa.*

Nom. *hæc defruta.*
Acc. *hæc defruta.*
Voc. *ô defruta.*

Nom. *hæc thura.*
Acc. *hæc thura.*
Voc. *ô thura.*

Q. *Are there any other defective Heteroclites?*

A. Yes; there are ſome which are of the Maſculine Gender in the Singular Number and want the Plural, ſome that are of the Feminine Gender in the Singular and want the Plural, and ſome of the Neuter Gender in the Singular and want the Plural, contrariwiſe there are ſome Nouns of the Maſculine Gender in the Plural, ſome of the Feminine Gender, and ſome of the Neuter in the Plural Number which want the Singular.

Q. *What Nouns are of the Maſculine Gender in the Singular Number that want the Plural?*

Heſperus & veſper. A. Theſe Nouns *heſperus, veſper, tus,* &c. are of the Maſculine Gender in the Singular Number, and want the Plural.

Q. *Decline the words of this Rule?*

A. Singular.

Nom. *hic heſperus, ri, hic veſper, pĕris.*
hic pontus, ti; hic limus, limi.
hic ſimus, mi; hic penus, ni.
hic ſanguis, gŭinis; hic æther, ĕris.
hic & hæc nemo. Gen. *car.* Dat. *mĭni.*
Acc. *hunc & hanc minem.* Voc. *caret.*

Plur. car.

Q. *What Nouns are of the Feminine Gender in the Singular Number, that want the Plural?*

Singula fœminei generis. A. Theſe Nouns *pubes, ſalus, indole, tuſſis,* &c. are of the Feminine Gender in the Singular Number, and want the Plural.—As,

Singulariter.

Nom. *hæc pubes, bis; hæc ſalus, lutis.*
hæc talio, ōnis; hæc indoles, lis.
hæc tuſſis, ſis. Acc. *tuſſim.*
hæc pix, picis; hæc humus, mi.
hæc lues, is; hæc ſitis, tis. Acc. *ſitim.*
hæc fuga, æ; hæc quies, ētis.
hæc cholera, a; hæc fames, mis.
hæc bilis, lis; hæc ſenecta, æ.
hæc juventus. Gen. *juventutis.*

Plur.

Q.

Q. *Do all the Nouns in this Rule want the Plural Number?*

A. No; these Nouns *soboles* and *labes*, and all Nouns of the fifth Declension will have three like Cases in the Plural Number, except *res*, *species*, *facies* and *dies*, which are whole in the Plural Number. *Sed tamen hæc soboles.*

Q. *Decline the aforenamed Nouns.*

Nom. *hæc soboles, lis.* Plur. Nom. *hæ soboles.* Acc. *has soboles.* Voc. *ô soboles.*

Nom. *hæc labes, bis.* Plur. Nom. *hæ labes.* Acc. *has labes.* Voc. *ô labes.*

Nom. *hæc res.* Gen. *rei.* Plur. Nom. *hæ res.* Gen. *harum rerum*, &c.

Nom. *hæc species.* Gen. *speciēi.* Plur. Nom. *hæ species.* Gen. *harum specierum*, &c.

Nom. *hæc facies.* Gen. *faciēi.* Plur. Nom. *hæ facies.* Gen. *harum facierum*, &c.

Nom. *hæc acies.* Gen. *aciēi.* Plur. Nom. *hæ acies.* Gen. *harum acierum*, &c.

Nom. *hic vel hæc dies.* Gen. *diēi.* Plur. Nom. *hi dies.* Gen. *horum dierum*, &c.

Q. *Are there any more Nouns that are Feminine in the Singular and want the Plural?*

A. Yes, To these words may be added many more Feminines which want the Plural, as the names of Virtues and Vices: As — *Istis multæ solent muliebria.*

Singul. { Nom. *hæc stultitia, æ.* / Nom. *hæc invidia, æ.* / Nom. *hæc sapientia, æ.* / Nom. *hæc desidia, æ.* } Plurali car.

With many others, which we may observe in reading of Authors, which, upon some occasion, may be put in the Plural Number.

Q. *What Nouns are of the Neuter Gender in the Singular Number, that want the Plural?*

A. These Nouns * *delicium, ſenium, lethum*, &c. are of the Neuter Gender in the Singular Number, and want the Plural.

nec licet his neutris.

Q. *Decline the words belonging to this Rule?*

A. Singulariter

Nom. *hoc delicium, delicii.*
hoc ſenium, ſenii.
hoc lethum, lethi.
hoc cœnum, cœni.
hoc ſalum, ſali.
hoc barathrum, barathri.
hoc virus. Acc. *virus.* Voc. *ô virus.*
hoc vitrum, vitri.
hoc viſcum, viſci.
hoc penum, peni.
juſtitium, juſtitii.
hoc nihilum, nihili.
hoc ver, veris.
hoc lac, lactis.
hoc gluten, glutĕnis.
hæc aut hoc † *halec, halecis.*
hoc gelu invariabile.
hoc ſolium, ſolii.
hoc jubar, jubăris.

* *Delicium* hath *deliciæ* in the Plural.

Plur. car.

† *Halec* makes *haleces* in the Plural Number, and is of the Fem. Gender.

Q. *What Nouns are of the Maſculine Gender in the Plural Number, and want the Singular?*

A. These Nouns *manes, majores, cancelli, liberi*, &c. are of the Maſculine Gender in the Singular Number, and want the Plural.

Maſcula ſunt tantum numero.

Q. *Decline*

Q. *Decline the words belonging to this Rule?*

A. Singularim caret.

Pluraliter Nominativo *Hi*

Dec.	
3. *manes.*	Gen. *horum manium.*
3. *majores.*	Gen. *horum majorum.*
2. *cancelli.*	Gen. *horum cancellorum.*
2. *liberi.*	Gen. *horum liberorum.*
3. *antes.*	Gen. *horum antium.*
3. *menſes.*	Gen. *horum menſium.*
3. *lemures.*	Gen. *horum lemurum.*
2. *faſti.*	Gen. *horum faſtorum.*
3. *minores.*	Gen. *horum minorum.*
3. *natales.*	Gen. *horum natalium.*
3. *penates.*	Gen. *horum penatum.*
2. *gabii.*	Gen. *horum gabiorum.*
2. *locri.*	Gen. *horum locrorum.*

With many others of the like ſort.

Q. *What Nouns are of the Feminine Gender in the Plural Number, that want the Singular?*

A. Theſe Nouns *exuviæ*, *phaleræ*, *grates*, &c. are of the Feminine Gender in the Plural Number, and want the Singular. *Hæc ſunt fœminei generis.*

Q. *How are the words declined which belong to this Rule?*

A. Singulari caret.

Pluraliter Nominativo *hæ*

	Genitivo *harum*
1. *Exuviæ.*	*exuviarum.*
1. *phalaræ.*	*phalerarum.*
3. *grates.* Acc. *grates.* Voc. *grates.*	
1. *manubiæ.*	*manubiarum.*
4. *idus.*	*iduum.*
1. *antiæ.*	*antiarum.*
1. *induciæ.*	*induciarum.*
1. *insidiæ.*	*insidiarum.*
1. *minæ.*	*minarum.*
1. *excubiæ.*	*excubiarum.*
1. *nonæ.*	*nonarum.*
1. *nugæ.*	*nugarum.*
1. *tricæ.*	*tricarum.*
1. *calendæ.*	*calendarum.*
1. *quisquiliæ.*	*quisquiliarum.*
1. *thermæ.*	*thermarum.*
1. *cunæ.*	*cunarum.*
1. *diræ.*	*dirarum.*
1. *exequiæ.*	*exequiarum.*
1. *feriæ.*	*feriarum.*
1. *inferiæ.*	*inferiarum.*
1. *primitiæ.*	*primitiarum.*
1. *plagæ.*	*plagarum.*
1. *valvæ.*	*valvarum.*
1. *divitiæ.*	*divitiarum.*
1. *nuptiæ.*	*nuptiarum.*
3. *lactes.*	*lactium.*
1. *Thebæ.*	*Thebarum.*
1. *Athenæ.*	*Athenarum.*

Of which sort there are many more names of places.

Q. *Wha*

Q. *What Nouns are of the Neuter Gender in the Plural Number, that want the Singular?*

A. These Nouns *mœnia, teſqua*, &c. are of the Neuter Gender in the Plural Number, and want the Singular. *Rarius hæc primo.*

Q. *How are the words declined that belong to this Rule?*

A. Singulari caret.

2. 3. *mœnia.*	Genitivo *borum*	*mœniorum & ium.*
2. *teſqua.*		*teſquorum.*
2. *præcordia.*		*præcordiorum.*
2. *luſtra.*		*luſtrorum.*
2. *arma.*		*armorum.*
2. *mapalia.*		*mapaliorum.*
2. *bellaria.*		*bellariorum.*
2. *munia.*		*munierum.*
2. *caſtra.*		*caſtrorum.*
2. *juſta.*		*juſtorum.*
2. *ſponſalia.*		*ſponſaliorum.*
2. *roſtra.*		*roſtrorum.*
2. *crepundia.*		*crepundiorum.*
2. *cunabula.*		*cunabulorum.*
2. *exta.*		*extorum.*
2. *effata.*		*effatorum.*
2. 3. *bacchanalia.*		*bacchanaliorum & ium.*

With others which may be added to this Rule.

Of Redundant Heteroclites.

Q. *Wherein are Heteroclites Redundant or Abounding?*

A. In Gender, Termination, Caſe and Declenſion.

Q. *What is the firſt Rule for Redundant Heteroclites?*

A. Hæc quaſi luxuriant varias, &c.

Q. *Give the meaning of this Rule?*

A. These Nouns following do abound, by varying the Termination in the Nominative Case, and changing the Gender.

Hæc quasi luxuriant.

Q. *Decline the Nouns belonging to this Rule?*

A.

Sing. Nom.	Gen. *hujus*	
Hic Tonitrus,	*tonitrus,*	Thunder.
Hoc Tonitru,	invariabile,	
Hic Clipeus,	*clipei,*	a Buckler.
Hoc Clipeum,	*clipei,*	
Hic Baculus,	*baculi,*	a Staff.
Hoc Baculum,	*baculi,*	
Hoc Bacillum,	*bacilli,*	
Hic Senſus,	*ſenſûs,*	the Meaning.
Hoc Senſum,	*ſenſi,*	
Hoc Tapetum,	*tapeti,*	Tapeſtry.
Hoc Tapete, tis, Abl.	*tapeti,*	
Hic Tapes,	*tapetis,*	
Hic Punctus,	*puncti,*	a Point.
Hoc Punctum,	*puncti,*	
Hoc Sinapi,	invariabile.	Muſtard Seed.
Hæc Sinapis,	*ſinapis,*	
Hic Sinus,	*ſini,*	a Milk Veſſel.
Hoc Sinum,	*ſini,*	
Hæc Menda,	*mendæ,*	a Fault.
Hoc Mendum,	*mendi,*	
Hic Viſcus,	*viſci,*	Birdlime.
Hoc Viſcum,	*viſci,*	
Hoc Cornu,	invariabile.	an Horn.
Hoc Cornum,	*corni,*	
Hic Cornus,	*corni,*	The Wing of an Army.
Hic Eventus,	*venti,*	an event.
Hoc Eventum,	*eventi,*	

With many other of the ſame ſort.

Q. *What is the ſecond Rule for Redundant Heteroclites?*

A. Sed tibi præterea quædam, &c.

Q. Gi

Q. *Give the meaning of this Rule.*

A. There are ſome Nouns which are derived from the Greeks which make the Accuſative Singular to end in [*a*,] from which Accuſative Caſes, come Nouns of the firſt Declenſion. *Sed tibi præterea.*

Q. *Decline the VVords that belong to this Rule?*

A. Nom. *hic Panther*, Gen. *thēris*, Acc. *thēra.*
Nom. *hic Crater*, Gen. *tērīs*, Acc. *tēra.*
Nom. *hæc Caſſis*, Gen. *ſĭdis*, Acc. *ſida.*
Nom. *hic æther*, Gen. *thĕrīs*, Acc. *thĕra.*

Q. *Decline theſe Nouns that come from the* Acc. *Caſes aforeſaid?*

A.

Sing. No.
hæc Panthera, Gen. *æ.*
hæc Cratera, Gen. *teræ.*
hæc Caſſida, Gen. *ſidæ.*
hæc æthera, Gen. *theræ.*

Q. *VVhat is the third Rule for Redundant Heteroclites?*

A. Vertitur his rectus, ſenſus manet, &c.

Q. *VVhat is the meaning of this Rule?*

A. The Termination of the Nominative Caſe is varied in theſe Nouns following, and have the ſame Signification and the ſame Gender. *Vertitur his rectus, cenſus &c.*

Q. *Give the Examples of this Rule?*

Anſw.

Singulariter Nom.
hic Gibbus, bi, and *hic Gibber, bĕris.*
hic Cucumis, is, and *hic Cucumer, ĕris.*
hæc Stipis, ſtipis, and *hæc Stips, ſtipis.*
hic vel hæc Cinis, nĕris, and *hic vel hæc Ciner, ĕris.*
hic Vomis, mĕris, and *hic Vomer, mĕris.*
hæc Scobis, bis, and *hæc Scobs, ſcobis.*
hic vel hæc pulvis, ĕris, and *hic vel hæc pulver, ĕris.*
hic vel hæc pubes, is, and *hic vel hæc puber, ĕris.*

To which may be added Nouns that end in [*r*] and in [*os*] in the Nom. Caſe Sing. As, *Quibus addes,*

Sing. No.

Sing. No.
hic Honor, or *Honos*, Gen. *honōris.*
hic Labor, or *Labos*, Gen. *labōris.*
hæc Arbor, or *Arbos*, Gen. *arbŏris.*
hic Odor, or *Odos*, Gen. *odōris.*

To which you may add these that follow.

Nom. *hæc Apes, pis*, or *hæc apis, apis.*
hæc Plebes, plebis, or *hæc Plebs, plebis.*

Sunt quoque multa. There are also many Nouns derived from the Greeks, which vary the Termination of the Nominative Case. As,

Sing. Nom. *Hic*
Delphin, phinis, and *hic Delphinus, ni.*
Elephas, antis, and *hic Elephantus, elephanti.*
Congrus, congri, and *hic Conger, congri.*
Meleagrus, gri, and *hic Meleager, gri.*
Teucrus, cri, and *hic Teucer, cri.*

To which you may add all Words of this sort which you meet with in reading.

Q. *What is the last Rule for Redundant Heteroclites?*

A. Hæc simul & quarta flexus. These Nouns following are of the Second and fourth Declension in some Cases.

——As,

Sing. Nom.		
hæc Laurus, ri, & ûs.	*hic vel hæc Penus ni, & (nûs.*	
hæc Quercus, ci, & cûs.		
hæc Pinus, pini & nûs.	*hæc Cornus, ni, & nûs.*	
hæc Ficus, ci, & ficûs.	*hæc Lacus, ci, & cûs.*	
hæc Colus, li, & colûs.	*hæc Domus, mi, & mûs.*	

Q. *Are there any Redundant Adjectives?*

A. Yes, but especially such as are derived from these Substantives, viz. — *arma, jugum, nervus, somnus, clivus, animus, linus, cera, frænum*, and *bacillum*, which are either of three Articles or of three Terminations: As, from *Arma* signifying Weapons, comes

Et qua luxuriant.

Inermus, ma, mum, or *Hic & hæc Inermis, & hoc Inerme*, } *Unarmed.*

The word *Hilarius* is seldom read, but *Hilaris* is common.

AS IN PRÆSENTI

Examined and Explained.

AS *In Præſenti:* Firſt Conjugation.

Q. *What is the meaning of this Rule* AS, in Præſenti?

Q. The Termination [*as*] in the ſecond Perſon of the Preſent tenſe, ſhall make [*avi*] in the Preterperfect tenſe.

Q. *Give ſome Examples?*

A. No, n—as, n—avi, nare, nandi, nando, nandum, natum, natu, nans, naturus. *to Swim.*

Vocito, vocit-as, vocit—avi, vocitare, tandi, do, dum, tatum, tu, tans, taturus. *to Call often.*

Q. *Do all Verbs in* O, *of the firſt Conjugation (as they end in* [as] *in the ſecond Perſon of the Preſent tenſe) end in* [avi] *in the firſt Perſon of the Preterperfect tenſe?*

A. No: Except theſe following.

Preſ. tenſe.	Preter. tenſe.	Infinit. Mood.	Supines.
Lavo, vas,	*lavi,*	*lavare,*	*lotum, tu.*
Juvo, vas,	*juvi,*	*juvare,*	*jutum, tu.*
Nexo, as,	*nexui,*	*nexare,*	*nexum, u.*
Seco, cas,	*ſecui,*	*ſecare,*	*ſectum, tu.*

Preſ.

Pref. tenſe.	Preter tenſe.	Infinit. Mood.	Supines.
Neco, cas,	*necui,*	*necare,*	*nectum, tu.*
Mico, cas,	*micui,*	*micare,*	Sup. caret.
Plico, cas,	*plicui,*	*plicare,*	*plicatum, tu.*
Frico, cas,	*fricui,*	*fricare,*	*frictum, tu.*
Domo, mas,	*domui,*	*domare,*	*domitum, tu.*
Tono, nas,	*tonui,*	*tonare,*	*tonitum, tu.*
Sono, nas,	*ſonui,*	*ſonare,*	*ſonitum, tu.*
Crepo, pas,	*crepui,*	*crepare,*	*crepitum, tu.*
Veto, tas,	*vetui,*	*vetare,*	*vetitum, tu.*
Cubo, bas,	*cubui,*	*cubare,*	*cubitum, tu.*
Do, das,	*dedi,*	*dare,*	*datum, tu.*
Sto, ſtas,	*ſteti,*	*ſtare,*	*ſtatum, tu.*

A General Rule. —— If a Verb ſimple of the firſt Conjugation ends in [*avi*] in the Preterperfect tenſe *AS in Præſenti* is the Rule for it, but if it do not end in [*avi*] in the Preterperfect tenſe, then you muſt ſay it is excepted from —— *AS in Præſenti.*

ES, *In Præſenti*: Second Conjugation.

Q. *What is the meaning of this Rule?* ES in Præſenti?

A. The Termination [*es*] in the ſecond Perſon of the Preſent tenſe ſhall make [*ui*] in the Preterperfect tenſe. —— As,

Nigreo, nigres, nigrui, nigrere, nigrendi, do, dum, Supinis caret, nigrens.

Q. *Do all Verbs in* O, *of the firſt Conjugation, (as they end in* [es] *in the ſecond Perſon of the Preſent tenſe) end in* [ui] *in the firſt Perſon of the Preterperfect tenſe?*

No: Theſe words following are excepted.

Pre-

Pref. tenſe.	Preter. tenſe.	Infinit. Mood.	Supines.
Jubeo, es,	*juſſi*,	*jubere*,	*juſſum, ſu.*
Sorbeo, es,	*ſorbui, & pſi*,	*ſorbere*,	*ſorptum, tu.*
Mulceo, es,	*mulſi*,	*mulcere*,	*mulſum, ſu.*
Luceo, es,	*luxi*,	*lucere*,	Sup. caret.
Sedeo, es,	*ſedi*,	*ſedere*,	*ſeſſum, ſu.*
Video, es,	*Vidi*,	*videre*,	*viſum, ſu.*
Prandeo, es,	*prandi & pranſus ſum vel fui*,	*prandere*,	*pranſum, ſu.*
Stridéo, es,	*ſtridi*,	*ſtridere*,	Sup. caret.
Suadeo, es,	*ſuaſi*,	*ſuadere*,	*ſuaſum, ſu.*
Rideo, es,	*riſi*,	*ridere*,	*riſum, ſu.*
Ardeo, es,	*arſi*,	*ardere*,	*arſum, ſu.*

Q. *What Verbs of the ſecond Conjugation double the firſt Syllable of the Preter tenſe?*

A. Theſe four, *pendeo, mordeo, ſpondeo* and *tondeo*. —As,

Pendeo, es,	*pependi*,	*pendere*,	*penſum, ſu.*
Mordeo, es,	*momordi*,	*mordere*,	*morſum, ſu.*
Spondeo, es,	*ſpoſpondi*,	*ſpondere*,	*ſponſum, ſu.*
Tondeo, es,	*totondi*,	*tondere*,	*tonſum, ſu.*

Q. *If in Verbs of the ſecond Conjugation, the Letters* L *or* R *come before* geo, *in the preſent tenſe, how ſhall the Preterperfect tenſe end?*

A. In *ſi*, —As, —*Urgeo, es, ſi, gere, urgendi, do, dum, urſum, u, gens, ſurus.*

Mulgeo, es, mulſi, and ſometimes *xi, mulgere, gendi, do, dum, mulctum, ctu, mulgens, mulcturus.*

Pref. tenſe.	Pret. tenſe.	Infinit. Mood.	Supines.
Frigeo, es,	*frixi*,	*frigere*,	Sup. caret.
Lugeo, es,	*luxi*,	*lugere*,	*luctuum, u.*
Augeo, es,	*auxi*,	*augere*,	*auctum, u.*
Fleo, fles,	*flevi*,	*flere*,	*fletum, tu.*

Pref.

Pres.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
leo, les.	*levi.*	*lere.*	*letum, tu.*
deleo, es.	*delevi.*	*delere.*	*deletum, tu.*
pleo, ples.	*plevi.*	*plere.*	*pletum, tu.*
neo, nes.	*nevi.*	*nere.*	*netum, tu.*
maneo, es.	*manſi.*	*manere.*	*manſum, u.*
torqueo, es.	*torſi.*	*torquere.*	*tortum & ſum.*
hæreo, res.	*hæſi.*	*hærere.*	*hæſum, u.*

Q. *How do the Preter Tenſes of Verbs of the ſecond Conjugation end, when the firſt Perſons Singular end in veo?*

A. In *vi.*——as *ferveo, ves, vi, vēre, vendi, do, dum ſupinis caret, fervens; niveo, ves, vi & nixi, nivere, vendi, do, dum, ſup. caret, nivens; conniveo, ves, vi, vēre, vendi, do, dum, ſup. caret, connivens; cieo, cies, civi, ciere, endi, do, dum, citum, u, ens, turus; vieo, es, evi, ere, viendi, do, dum, vietum, tu, viens, turus.*

A General Rule. If a Verb ſimple of the ſecond Conjugation ends in *ui*, in the Preterperfect Tenſe, *Es in Præſenti* is the Rule for declining it, but if it doth not end in *ui*, then it is excepted from—*Es in Præſenti.*

Tertia Præteritum.

The third Conjugation.

Q. *How do the Preſent Tenſes of Verbs in* o, *of the third Conjugation end?*

A. The Terminations of the Preſent Tenſe of Verbs of the third Conjugation are either in *Bo, Co, Do, Go, Ho, Lo, Mo, No, Po, Quo, Ro, So, Sco, To, Vo, Xo, Cio, Dio, Gio, Pio, Rio, Tio* or *Uo.*

Q. *How*

Q. *How muſt Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Bo. *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Bi* —— as, ——

Preſ.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supin.
lambo, is.	*lambi.*	*lambĕre.*	*caret.*

Q. *Do all words that end in* Bo, *in the Preſent, end in* Bi *in the Preterperfect Tenſe?*

A. No.—Except theſe following——

scribo, bis.	*scripſi.*	*scribere.*	*ſcriptum, u.*
nubo, bis.	*nupſi.*	*nŭbere.*	*nuptum, u.*
cumbo, bis.	*cubui.*	*cumbĕre.*	*cubitum, u.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Co. *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Ci* — as —

vinco, is.	*vici.*	*vincĕre.*	*victum, u.*
parco, cis.	*peperci, & parſi.*	*parcĕre.*	*caret.*

Q. *Do all words that end in* Co *in the Preſent Tenſe, end in* Ci *in the Preterperfect Tenſe?*

A. No; Except ——

dico, cis.	*dixi.*	*dicere.*	*dictum, u.*
duco, cis.	*duxi.*	*ducere.*	*ductum, u.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end* Do. *in* Do *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In

A. In *di*——as——

Pres.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supine.
mando, is.	*mandi.*	*mandere.*	*mansum, u.*
scindo, is.	*scidi.*	*scindere.*	*scissum, u.*
findo, is.	*fidi.*	*findere.*	*fissum, u.*
fundo, is.	*fudi.*	*fundere.*	*fusum, u.*
tundo, is.	*tutidi.*	*tundere.*	*tunsum, u.*
pendo, is.	*pependi.*	*pendere.*	*pensum, u.*
tendo, is.	*tetendi.*	*tendere.*	*tensum, u.*
pedo, is.	*pepedi.*	*pedere.*	*peditum, u.*
cado, is.	*cecidi.*	*cadere.*	*casum, u.*
cædo, is.	*cæcidi.*	*cædere.*	*cæsum, u.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Do *in the Present Tense, end in* Di *in the Preter Tense?*

A. No——Except——

cedo, is.	*cessi.*	*cedere.*	*cessum, u.*
vado, is.	*vasi.*	*vadere.*	*vasum, u.*
rado, is.	*rasi.*	*radere.*	*rasum, u.*
lædo, is.	*læsi.*	*lædere.*	*læsum, u.*
ludo, is.	*lusi.*	*ludere.*	*lusum, u.*
divido, is.	*divisi.*	*dividere.*	*divisum, u.*
trudo, is.	*trusi.*	*trudere.*	*trusum, u.*
claudo, is.	*clausi.*	*claudere.*	*clausum, u.*
plaudo, is.	*plausi.*	*plaudere.*	*plausum, u.*
rodo, is.	*rosi.*	*rodere.*	*rosum, u.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in* Go *in the Present Tense?*

A. In *xi*——as——

Jungo, gis.	*junxi.*	*jungere.*	*junctum, u.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Go *in the Preſent Tenſe, end in* Xi *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No: Except when the Letter *r* comes before *go*, in the Preſent Tenſe,——as——

Pres.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
ſpargo, is.	*ſparſi.*	*ſpargere.*	*ſparſum, u.*

Except alſo——

lego, is.	*legi.*	*legere.*	*lectum, u.*
ago, is.	*egi.*	*agere.*	*actum, u.*
tango, is.	*tetigi.*	*tangere.*	*tactum, u.*
pungo, is.	*punxi, & pupigi.*	*pungere.*	*punctum, u.*
frango, is.	*fregi.*	*frangere.*	*fractum, u.*

Pango, when it is Latin for to make a bargain, will make *Pepigi* in the Preter-perfect Tenſe; when it is Latin for to joyn, it will make *Pegi*, but when it is Latin for to ſing, it will make *panxi* in the Preterperfect Tenſe,—as— Note.

pango, is.	*pepigi.*	*pangere.*	*pactum, u.*
pango, is.	*pegi.*	*pangere.*	*pactum, u.*
pango, is.	*panxi.*	*pangere.*	*pactum, u.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Ho *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Xi*—as—

trahо, is.	*traxi.*	*trahere.*	*tractum, u.*
veho, is.	*vexi.*	*vehere.*	*vectum, u.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Lo *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Ui*—as—

colo, is.	*colui.*	*colere.*	*cultum, u.*

Q. *Do*

Lo. Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Lo, *in the Present Tense, end in* Ui *in the Preter Tense?*

A. No. —— Except ——.

Pres.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Sup.
psallo, is.	*psalli.*	*psallere.*	*caret.*
fallo, is.	*falli.*	*fallere.*	*falsum, u.*
vello, is.	*velli, & vulsi.*	*vellere.*	*vulsum, u.*
fallo, is.	*fefelli.*	*fallere.*	*falsum, u.*
cello, is.	*ceculi.*	*cellere.*	*culsum, u.*
pello, is.	*pepuli.*	*pellere.*	*pulsum, u.*

Mo. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in* Mo *in the Present Tense?*

A. In *Vi* —— as ——

vomo, is.	*vomui.*	*vomere.*	*vomitum, u.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Mo *in the Present Tense, end in* Ui *in the Preter Tense?*

A. No. —— Except ——

emo, i.	*emi.*	*emere.*	*emptum, u.*
como, is.	*compsi.*	*comere.*	*comptum, u.*
promo, is.	*prompsi.*	*promere.*	*promptum.*
demo, i.	*dempsi.*	*demere.*	*demptum.*
sumo, is.	*sumpsi.*	*sumere.*	*sumptum.*
premo, is.	*pressi.*	*premere.*	*pressum.*

No. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in* No *in the Present Tense?*

A. In *Vi* —— as ——

sino, is.	*sivi.*	*sinere.*	*situm, u.*
sterno, is.	*stravi.*	*sternere.*	*stratum, u.*
sperno, is.	*sprevi.*	*spernere.*	*spretum, u.*
cerno, is.	*crevi.*	*cernere.*	*cretum, u.*

Q.

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* No *in the Preſent Tenſe, end in* Vi *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No——Except——

Preſ.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Sup.
temno, is.	*tempſi.*	*temnere.*	*temptum, u.*
lino, is.	*levi, lini, livi.*	*linere.*	*litum, u.*
gigno, is.	*genui.*	*gignere.*	*genitum, u.*
pono, is.	*poſui.*	*ponere.*	*poſitum, u.*
cano, is.	*cecini.*	*canere.*	*cantum, u.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Po *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Pſi*——as——.

ſcalpo, is.	*ſcalpſi.*	*ſcalpere.*	*ſcalptum.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Po *in the Preſent Tenſe, end in* Pſi *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No——Except——

rumpo, is.	*rupi.*	*rumpere.*	*ruptum.*
ſtrepo, is.	*ſtrepui.*	*ſtrepere.*	*ſtrepitum.*
crepo, is.	*crepui.*	*crepere.*	*crepitum.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Quo *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Qui*——as——

linquo, is.	*liqui.*	*linquere.*	*lictum, u.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that make* Quo *in the Preſent Tenſe, make* Qui *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No——Except——

coquo, is.	*coxi.*	*coquere.*	*coctum, u.*

Q. How

Ro. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in* Ro *in the Present Tense?*

A. In *vi* —— as ——

Pres.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Sup.
sero, is.	*sevi.*	*serere.*	*satum, u.*
quæro, is.	*quæsivi.*	*quærere.*	*quæsitum, u.*
tero, is.	*trivi.*	*terere.*	*tritum, u.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that make* Ro *in the Present Tense make* Vi *in the Preter Tense?*

A. No —— Except ——

to approach.	*sero, is.*	*serui.*	*serere.*	*sertum, u.*
	verro, is.	*verri.* & *versi.*	*verrere.*	*versum, u.*
	uro, is.	*ussi.*	*urere.*	*ustum, u.*
	gero, is.	*gessi.*	*gerrere.*	*gestum, u.*
	curro, is.	*cucurri.*	*currere.*	*cursum, u.*

So. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in* So *in the Present Tense?*

A. In *Sivi* —— as ——

accesso, is.	*accessivi.*	*accessere.*	*accessitum.*
arcesso, is.	*accessivi.*	*arcessere.*	*arcessitum.*
incesso, is.	*incessivi.*	*incessere.*	*incessitum.*
lacesso, is.	*lacessivi.*	*lacessere.*	*lacessitum.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* So *in the Present Tense end in* Sivi *in the Preter Tense?*

A. No —— Except ——

capesso, is.	*capessi,* & *capessivi.*	*capessere.*	*capessum* & *capessitum.*
facesso, is.	*facessi.*	*facessere.*	*facessum.*
viso, is.	*visi.*	*visere.*	*visum.*
pinso, is.	*pinsui.*	*pinsere.*	*pistum.*

Q.

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjuga-* *end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Sco. *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *vi* —— as ——

Preſ.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Sup.
ſco, is.	*pavi.*	*paſcere.*	*paſtum.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Sco *in the Preſent Tenſe, end in* Vi *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No —— Except ——

co, is.	*popoſci.*	*paſcere.*	*caret.*
ſco, is.	*didici.*	*diſcere.*	*caret.*
niſco, is.	*quexi.*	*quiniſcere.*	*caret.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjuga-* *end in the Preter Tenſe, when the preſent Tenſe ends in* To. To.

A. In *Ti* —— as ——

rto, is.	*verti.*	*vertere.*	*verſum, u.*
o, is.	*ſtiti.*	*ſiſtere.*	*ſtatum.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* To *in the Preſent Tenſe, end in* Ti *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No —— Except ——

tto, is.	*miſi.*	*mittere.*	*miſſum.*
to, is.	*petii,* or *petivi.*	*petere.*	*petitum.*
rto, is.	*ſtertui.*	*ſtertere.*	*caret.*
to, is.	*meſui.*	*metere.*	*meſſum.*
llo, is.	*flexi.*	*flectere.*	*flexum.*
llo, is.	*pexi,* & *pexui.*	*pectere.*	*pexum.*
llo, is.	*nexui,* & *nexi.*	*nectere.*	*nexum.*

Q. *How*

Vo. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Vo *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *vi* —— as ——

Preſ.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Sup.
volvo, is.	*volvi.*	*volvere.*	*volutum.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Vo *in the Preſent Tenſe, end in* Vi *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No —— Except ——

vivo, is.	*vixi.*	*vivere.*	*victum.*

Xo. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Xo *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Ui* —— as ——

nexo, is.	*nexui.*	*nexere.*	*nexum,*
texo, is.	*texui.*	*texere.*	*textum,*

Cio. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Cio *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Ci* — as —

facio, is.	*feci.*	*facere.*	*factum,*
jacio, is.	*jeci.*	*jacere.*	*jactum,*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Cio *in the Preſent Tenſe, end in* Ci *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No —— Except ——

lacio, is.	*lexi.*	*lacere.*	*lectum,*
ſpecio, is.	*ſpexi.*	*ſpecere.*	*ſpectum,*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Dio. Dio *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Di* — as —

Preſ.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
fodio, is.	*fodi.*	*fodere.*	*foſſum, u.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Gio. Gio *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Gi* — as ——

fugio, is.	*fugi.*	*fugere.*	*fugitum.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Pio. Pio *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Pi* —— as ——

capio, is.	*cepi.*	*capere.*	*captum, u.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Pio *in the Preſent Tenſe, end in* Pi *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No —— Except ——

cupio, is.	*cupivi.*	*cupere.*	*cupitum.*
rapio, is.	*rapui.*	*rapere.*	*raptum.*
ſapio, is.	*ſapui,* & *ſapivi.*	*ſapere.*	*ſapitum.*

Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Rio. Rio *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Ri* —— as ——

pario, is.	*peperi.*	*parere.*	*partum.*

Tio. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Tio *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *ſſi* —— as ——

Preſ.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
quatio, is.	*quaſſi.*	*quatere.*	*quaſſum.*

Vo. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Uo *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Ui* —— as ——

ſtatuo, is.	*ſtatui.*	*ſtatuere.*	*ſtatutum.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Uo *in the Preſent Tenſe, end in* Ui *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No —— Except ——

pluo, is.	*plui,* & *pluvi.*	*pluere.*	*pluitum.*
ſtruo, is.	*ſtruxi.*	*ſtruere.*	*ſtructum, u.*
fluo, is.	*fluxi.*	*fluere.*	*fluxum, u.*

Q. *How do you know certainly the Rule for declining a Verb of the third Conjugation, ſeeing the Terminations are ſo various?*

A. Mark how the firſt Perſon Singular ends in the Preſent Tenſe, (which will always be like ſome one of the Terminations aforegoing) and ſo doth the Rule begin; as, if the Verb to be declined end in *Bo*, as *Lambo*; then — *Bo fit Bi*, is the Rule for the Preterperfect Tenſe; and ſo of all other Terminations; but if the Preterperfect Tenſe of the Verb to be declined do not end according to the Termination in the Rule, as — *Scribo*, becauſe it doth not end in *Bi* in the Preterperfect Tenſe, but in *Pſi*, it is therefore excepted from *Bo fit Bi*; — and ſo of all other.

A General Rule.

Quæ-

Quarta dat is ivi.

Fourth Conjugation.

Q. *What is the meaning of this rule,* Quarta dat is ivi?

A. The Termination [*is*] in the ſecond Perſon Sing. of the Preſent Tenſe, ſhall make [*ivi*] in the Preter Tenſe. As,

Preſ.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
ſcio, ſcis,	*ſcivi,*	*ſcire,*	*ſcitum, u.*

Q. *Doth the Termination* [is] *in the ſecond Perſon of the Preſent Tenſe, always make the Pret. Tenſe, to end in* [ivi]?

A. No. —— Except ——

venio, is,	*veni,*	*venire,*	*ventum.*
cambio, is,	*campſi,*	*cambire,*	*campſum.*
raucio, is,	*rauci,*	*raucire,*	*rauſum.*
farcio, is,	*farſi,*	*farcire,*	*fartum.*
farcio, is,	*farſi,*	*farcire,*	*ſartum.*
ſepio, is,	*ſepſi,*	*ſepire,*	*ſeptum.*
ſentio, is,	*ſenſi,*	*ſentire,*	*ſenſum.*
fulcio, is,	*fulſi,*	*fulcire,*	*fultum.*
haurio, is,	*hauſi,*	*haurire,*	*hauſtum.*
ſancio, is,	*ſanxi,*	*ſancire,*	*ſanctum.*
vincio, is,	*vinxi,*	*vincire,*	*vinctum.*
ſalio, is,	*ſalui,*	*ſalire,*	*ſaltum.*
amicio, is,	*amicui,*	*amicire,*	*amictum.*

Theſe words, *cambivi, hauſivi, amicivi, ſepivi, ſancivi, ſarcivi,* and *ſalivi,* are ſeldom uſed in the Preterperfect Tenſe.

Tio. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Tio *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *ſſi* —— as ——

Preſ.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supiner.
quatio, is.	*quaſſi.*	*quatere.*	*quaſſum.*

Vo. Q. *How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tenſe, that end in* Uo *in the Preſent Tenſe?*

A. In *Ui* —— as ——

ſtatuo, is.	*ſtatui.*	*ſtatuere.*	*ſtatutum.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Uo *in the Preſent Tenſe end in* Ui *in the Preter Tenſe?*

A. No —— Except ——

pluo, is.	*plui, & pluvi.*	*pluere.*	*pluitum.*
ſtruo, is.	*ſtruxi.*	*ſtruere.*	*ſtructum, a.*
fluo, is.	*fluxi.*	*fluere.*	*fluxum, a.*

Q. *How do you know certainly the Rule for declining a Verb of the third Conjugation, ſeeing the Terminations are ſo various?*

A. Mark how the firſt Perſon Singular ends in the Preſent Tenſe, (which will always be like ſome one of the Terminations aforegoing) and ſo doth the Rule begin; as, if the Verb to be declined end in *Bo*, as *Lambo*; then — *Bo fit Bi*, is the Rule for the Preterperfect Tenſe, and ſo of all other Terminations; but if the Preterperfect Tenſe of the Verb to be declined do not end according to the Termination in the Rule, as—*Scribo*, becauſe it doth not end in *Bi* in the Preterperfect Tenſe, but in *Pſi*, it is therefore excepted from *Bo fit Bi*; —— ſo of all other.

A General Rule.

Quare

Quarta dat is ivi.

Fourth Conjugation.

Q. *What is the meaning of this rule,* Quarta dat is ivi?

A. The Termination [*is*] in the ſecond Perſon Sing. of the Preſent Tenſe, ſhall make [*ivi*] in the Preter Tenſe. As,

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
ſcio, ſcis,	*ſcivi,*	*ſcire,*	*ſcitum, u.*

Q. *Doth the Termination* [is] *in the ſecond Perſon of the Preſent Tenſe, always make the* Pret. Tenſe, *to end in* [ivi]?

A. No. —— Except ——

venio, is,	*veni,*	*venire,*	*ventum.*
cambio, is,	*campſi,*	*cambire,*	*campſum.*
raucio, is,	*rauſi,*	*rauſire,*	*rauſum.*
farcio, is,	*farſi,*	*farcire,*	*fartum.*
farcio, is,	*farſi,*	*farcire,*	*ſartum.*
ſepio, is,	*ſepſi,*	*ſepire,*	*ſeptum.*
ſentio, is,	*ſenſi,*	*ſentire,*	*ſenſum.*
fulcio, is,	*fulſi,*	*fulcire,*	*fultum.*
haurio, is,	*hauſi,*	*haurire,*	*hauſtum.*
ſancio, is,	*ſanxi,*	*ſancire,*	*ſanctum.*
vincio, is,	*vinxi,*	*vincire,*	*vinctum.*
ſalio, is,	*ſalui,*	*ſalire,*	*ſaltum.*
amicio, is,	*amicui,*	*amicire,*	*amictum.*

Theſe words, *cambivi, hauivi, amicivi, ſepivi, ſancivi, ſarcivi,* and *ſalivi,* are ſeldom uſed in the Preterperfect Tenſe.

A general Rule. If a Verb Simple of the fourth Conjugation ends in *ivi*, in the first Person of the Pret. Tense, *Quarta dat is ivi*, is the Rule for declining it; but if it do not end in *ivi*, in the Pret. Tense, then you must say, it is excepted from *Quarta dat is ivi*.

Hactenus de Verborum Simplicium Præteritis.

Præteritum dat idem.

Of the Preterperfect Tense of Compound Verbs.

Q. *What do you mean by a Simple, and what by a Compound Verb? or what is the difference between a Simple and a Compound Verb?*

The difference between a Simple and a Compound Verb. A. A Simple Verb (or Word) is that, which is not joined to, (or mixed with) any other word, or part of a word; but is without all manner of composition: — as *docui*. A Compound Verb (or Word) is that which hath some other Word, Preposition, or Syllable joined with it, and is made one word, which is called a Compound, — as *edocui*.

Q. *What Preterperfect Tense hath a Verb Compound?*

A. A Verb Compound hath the same Pret. Tense (generally) as a Verb Simple hath. As,

	Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines
Simp.	*doceo, es,*	*docui,*	*docere,*	*doctum, tu.*
Com.	*edoceo, es,*	*edocui,*	*edocere,*	*edoctum, tu.*

That

But note, that the Syllable which is doubled in the Pret. Tenſe of the Simple Verb, is not doubled in the Pret. Tenſe of the Compound, except in theſe three, ——— *Sed Syllaba ſemper.*

Preſ.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
præcurro, is,	*præcucurri,*	*præcurrere,*	*ſum.*
excurro, is,	*excucurri,*	*excurrere,*	*ſum.*
repungo, is,	*repupugi,*	*repungere,*	*ctum.*

Q. *Do no other words double the Syllable in the Pret. Tenſe?*

A. Yes, Some of the Compounds of *do*, *ſto*, and *poſco*.

Q. *How doth the Pret. Tenſe of* plico *end, when 'tis compounded with* ſub, *or a Noun?* *à plico compoſitum.*

A. It makes *plicavi*, in the Pret. Tenſe, as,

ſupplico, as,	*ſupplicavi,*	*ſupplicare,*	*catum.*
multiplico, as,	*multiplicavi,*	*multiplicare,*	*catum.*

Q. *How if* plico, *be compounded with any thing elſe?*

A. Then the Pret. Tenſe ſhall end in *ui*, or *avi*, as, ———

applico, as,	*ui*, or *avi*,	*applicare,*	*catum.*
complico, as,	*ui*, or *avi*,	*complicare,*	*catum.*
replico, as,	*ui*, or *avi*,	*replicare,*	*catum.*
explico, as,	*ui*, or *avi*,	*explicare,*	*catum.*

Q. *What do you ſay concerning the Compounds of* Oleo?

A. Although the Simple Verb *oleo*, will make *olui*, in the Pret. Tenſe, yet all the Compounds thereof will make *olevi*, in the Pret. Tenſe, except theſe following, *quamvis vult oleo.*

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
redoleo, es,	*redolui,*	*redolere,*	*redolitum.*
ſuboleo, es,	*ſubolui,*	*ſubolere,*	*ſubolitum.*

Which will have the ſame Pret. Tenſe, with the Simple Verb *Oleo.*

à pungo. Q. *How do the Compounds of* pungo, *form their Pret. Tenſe?*

A. All the Compounds of *pungo* will make *punxi,* in the Pret. Tenſe, except only ———

repungo, is,	*repupugi,* & *repunxi,*	*repungere,*	*punctum.*

Q. *How do the Compounds of* Do, *natum à do.* *when they be of the third Conjugation, end in the Pret. Tenſe?*

A. In *didi.* — as, ———

credo, is,	*credidi,*	*credere,*	*creditum.*
edo, is,	*edidi,*	*edere,*	*editum.*
dedo, is,	*dedidi,*	*dedere,*	*deditum.*
reddo, is,	*reddidi,*	*reddere,*	*redditum.*
perdo, is,	*perdidi,*	*perdere,*	*perditum.*
abdo, is,	*abdidi,*	*abdere,*	*abditum.*
obdo, is,	*obdidi,*	*obdere,*	*obditum.*
condo, is,	*condidi,*	*condere,*	*conditum.*
indo, is,	*indidi,*	*indere,*	*inditum.*
trado, is,	*tradidi,*	*tradere,*	*traditum.*
prodo, is,	*prodidi,*	*prodere,*	*proditum.*
vendo, is,	*vendidi,*	*vendere,*	*venditum.*

Q. *Do all the Compounds of* Do, *that are of the third Conjugation, end in* Didi, *in the Pret. Tenſe?*

A. No. ——— Except ———

abſcondo, is,	*abſcondi,*	*abſcondere,*	*abſconſum.*

Natum à ſto, Q. *What do the Compounds of* Sto, *make in the Pret. Tenſe?*

A. The Compounds of *ſto,* make *ſtiti,* in the Pret. Tenſe. — as, ———

reſto, as,	*reſtiti,*	*reſtare,*	*reſtitum.*

Of Simple Verbs that change the first Vowel of the Pres. and Pret. Tense into e, *when they be compounded.*

Q. *What Simple Verbs, when they be compounded, change the first Vowel of the Pres. and Pret. Tense, into* e?

A. These Simple Verbs, *damno, lacto, sacro, fallo, arceo, tracto, fatiscor, partio, carpo, pario, scando,* &c. When they be compounded change the first Vowel of the Pres. and Pret. into *e*. *Verba hæc Simplicia.*

Q. *Give an example?*

A. When [*con*] is put to the Simple Verb *damno*, it makes *condemno* (not *condamno*) by changing the first Vowel in *damno*, which is [*a*] into *e*, and so of all the rest. — as ———

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
condemno, as,	*condemnavi,*	*condemnare,*	*tum.*
de-lecto, as,	*delectavi,*	*delectare,*	*tum.*
con-secro, as,	*consecravi,*	*consecrare,*	*tum.*
de-scendo, is,	*descendi,*	*descendere,*	*sum.*
re-spergo, is,	*respersi,*	*respergere,*	*sum.*

Q. *Of what Conjugation are the Compounds of* pario, *and how do they make their Pret. Tenses to end?*

A. The Compounds of *pario*, are of the fourth Conjugation, and make *perui*, in the Pret. Tense. ——— as ——— *Pario nata.*

aperio, is,	*aperui,*	*aperire,*	*apertum.*
operio, is,	*operui,*	*operire,*	*opertum.*

Q. *Do all the Compounds of* pario, *make* perui, *in the Pret. Tense.*

A. No. ——— except ———

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
comperio, is,	*comperi,*	*comperire,*	*compertum.*
reperio, is,	*reperi,*	*reperire,*	*repertum.*

à paſco pavi.

Q. *What form do the Compounds of* paſco, *follow?*

A. The Compounds of *paſco*, do follow the form of the Simple Verb, that is, they do not change the firſt Vowel into *e*, as ——

epaſco, is,	*epavi,*	*epaſcere,*	*epaſtum.*

Q. *Do none of the Compounds of* paſco, *change the firſt Vowel into* e, *and make the Pret. Tenſe to end in* ui?

A. Yes, theſe two, *compeſco*, and *diſpeſco*, as

compeſco, is,	*compeſcui,*	*compeſcere,*	*caret.*
diſpeſco, is,	*diſpeſcui,*	*diſpeſcere,*	*caret.*

Of Verbs that change the firſt Vowel of the Pref. Tenſe and Pret. Tenſe into i, *when they be compounded.*

Q. *What Verbs change the firſt Vowel of the Pref. and Pret. Tenſe, into* i, *when they be compounded?*

Hæc habeo latus.

A. Theſe Simple Verbs, — *habeo, latus, ſalio, ſtatuo, cado, lædo*, &c. when they be compounded change the firſt Vowel of the Pref. and Pret. Tenſe into (*i.*)

Q. *Give ſome Examples?*

A. Co, (for *con*) being joined to *habeo*, makes *cohibeo*, by changing the firſt Vowel (*a*) into (*i*) — as

cohibeo, es,	*cohibui,*	*cohibere,*	*cohibitum.*
inſtituo, is,	*inſtitui,*	*inſtituere,*	*inſtitutum.*
recido, is,	*recidi,*	*recidere,*	*recaſum.*

and ſo of the reſt.

Q. Ho-

Q. *How do the Compounds of* cano, *make the Pret. Tense to end?* *à canto, tum.*

A. In *ui*, as ——

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
concino, is,	*concinui,*	*concinere,*	*concentum.*

Q. *What do you say of the Compounds of* placeo?

A. The Compounds of *placeo*, change the first Vowel of the Pres. and Pret. Tense into *i*. —— as —— *à placeo, sic.*

displiceo, es,	*displicui,*	*displicere,*	*displicitum.*

Except only these two following which follow the form of the Simple Verb, that is, they do not change the first Vowel into *i*, —— as ——

complaceo, es,	*placui,*	*placere,*	*complacitum,*
perplaceo, es,	*placui,*	*placere,*	*perplacitum.*

Q. *Do all the Compounds of* pango, *change the first Vowel of the Pres. and Pret. Tense into* i?

A. No. These four following, follow the form of the Simple Verb, that is, they do not change the first Vowel into *i*. —— as —— *Composita à pango.*

depango, is,		*depangere,*	
oppango, is,		*oppangere,*	
circumpango, is,	*pegi,*	*circumpangere,*	*pactum, u*
repango, is,		*repangere,*	

Q. *What do you say of the Compounds of* maneo?

A. All the Compounds of *maneo*, will follow the form of the Simple Verb; except these four following, which change the first Vowel into *i*; and make the Pret. Tense, to end in *ui*, —— as —— *à maneo mansi.*

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supine.
præmineo, es,		*præminere,*	
emineo, es,		*eminere,*	
promineo, es,	*minui,*	*prominere,*	*caret.*
immineo, es,		*imminere,*	

Q. *What do you say of the Compounds of* ſcalpo, calco, *and* ſalto?

Compoſita à ſcalpo, calco, ſalto.

A. The Compounds of *ſcalpo, calco* and *ſalto*, change - *a*, into *u*. — as —

exculpo, is,	*exculpſi,*	*exculpere,*	*ptum.*
inculco, as,	*inculcavi,*	*inculcare,*	*catum.*
reſulto, as,	*reſultavi,*	*reſultare,*	*tatum.*

Q. *What do you ſay of the Compounds of* claudo, quatio, *and* lavo?

Compoſita à claudo, quatio, lavo.

A. The Compounds of *claudo, quatio*, and *lavo*, caſt away, *a*. — as, —

occludo, is,	*occluſi,*	*occludere,*	*occluſum.*
excludo, is,	*excluſi,*	*excludere,*	*excluſum.*
percutio, is,	*percuſſi,*	*percutere,*	*percuſſum.*
excutio, is,	*excuſſi,*	*excutere,*	*excuſſum.*
proluo, is,	*prolui,*	*proluere,*	*prolutum.*
diluo, is,	*dilui,*	*diluere,*	*dilutum.*

Of Verbs that change the firſt Vowel of the Preſ. Tenſe into i; *but not of the Pret. Tenſe, when compounded.*

Q. *What Verbs, when compounded, change the firſt Vowel of the Preſent Tenſe, into* i, *but not of the Pret. Tenſe?*

Hæc ſi compones.

A. Theſe Verbs, *ago, emo, ſadeo, fugio, frango*, &c. when they be compounded change the firſt Vowel of the Preſ. into *i*, but not of the Pret. Tenſe. — as —

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
exigo, is,	*exegi,*	*exigere,*	*exactum.*
refringo, is,	*refregi,*	*refringere,*	*fractum.*
incipio, is,	*incepi,*	*incipere,*	*inceptum.*

Q. *But do all these Verbs change the first Vowel into* i ?

A. No. These two Compounds of *ago*, *perago*, and *satago*, do follow the form of the Simple Verb, that is, they do not change the first Vowel into *i*. —— as ——

Sed pauca notentur.

perago, is,	*peregi,*	*peragere,*	*peractum.*
satago, is,	*sategi,*	*satagere,*	*caret.*

Q. *What Compounds cast away the middle Syllable of the Pres. Tense ?*

A. Some of the Compounds of *ago*, and *rego*, cast away the middle Syllable, as —— *de* and *ago*, make *dego*, and *co* (for *con*) and *ago*, make *cogo*, by casting away the middle Syllable ; and *per* and *rego*, make *rego* ; and *sur* and *rego*, make *surgo* ; by casting away the middle Syllable. — as ——

Atque ab ago rego.

dego, is,	*degi,*	*degere,*	*caret.*
cogo, is,	*coegi,*	*cogere,*	*coactum.*
pergo, is,	*perexi,*	*pergere,*	*perrectum.*
surgo, is,	*surrexi,*	*surgere,*	*surrectum.*

Out of which four words the middle Syllable of the Pres. is cast.

Q. *What do you say of the Compounds of* facio ?

A. The Verb *facio*, doth never change the first Vowel into *i*, except it be compounded with a Preposition, —— as ——

Nil variat facio nisi præposito.

olfacio, is,	*olfeci,*	*olfacere,*	*factum.*
calfacio, is,	*calfeci,*	*calfacere,*	*factum.*
inficio, is,	*infeci,*	*inficere,*	*fectum.*

Q. *What*

Q. *What do you ſay of the Compounds of* lego?

A. When the Verb *lego*, is compounded with *re*, *ſe*, *præ*, *ſub*, or *trans*, it keeps the firſt Vowel of the Preſ. Tenſe, and makes *legi* in the Pret. Tenſe, all the reſt of the Compounds of *lego*, change the firſt Vowel into *i*; and make the Pret. *lexi*. —— as ——

à lego nata.

intelligo, is,	*intellexi,*	*intelligere,*	*lectum.*
diligo, is,	*dilexi,*	*diligere,*	*lectum.*
negligo, is,	*neglexi,*	*negligere,*	*lectum.*

Hactenus de Verborum Compoſitorum Præteritis.

Of

Of the Supines of Simple Verbs.

Q. *WHence are the Supines formed?*

A. The Supines are formed from the Pret. Tenſes of Verbs, which end either in *Bi*, *Ci*, *Di*, *Gi*, *Li*, *Mi*, *Ni*, *Pi*, *Qui*, *Ri*, *Si*, *Pſi*, *Ti*, *Vi*, *Ui*, or *Xi*. *Nunc ex præterito diſcat.*

Q. *How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tenſe ends in* Bi? *Bi.*

A. In *Tum.* —— as ——

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
bibo, is,	*bibi,*	*bibere,*	*bibitum.*

Q. *How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tenſe, ends in* Ci? *Ci.*

A. In *ctum.* —— as ——

vinco, is,	*vici,*	*vincere,*	*victum.*
ico, is,	*ici,*	*icere,*	*ictum.*
facio, is,	*feci,*	*facere,*	*factum.*
jacio, is,	*jeci,*	*jacere,*	*jactum.*

Q. *How doth the firſt Supine end, when the Preter Tenſe, ends in* Di? *Di.*

A. In *ſum.* —— as ——

video, es,	*vidi,*	*videre,*	*viſum, u.*
pando, is,	*pandi,*	*pandere,*	*paſſum, u.*
ſedeo, es,	*ſedi,*	*ſedere,*	*ſeſſum, u.*
ſcindo, is,	*ſcidi,*	*ſcindere,*	*ſciſſum, u.*
findo, is,	*fidi,*	*findere,*	*fiſſum, u.*
fodio, is,	*fodi,*	*fodere,*	*foſſum, u.*

But

Hic etiam advertas.

But we must observe, that the Syll. which is doubled in the Pret. Tense, not doubled in the Supine. — as —

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines
tondeo, es,	*totondi,*	*tondere,*	*tonsum, u.*
cædo, is,	*cæcidi,*	*cædere,*	*cæsum, u.*
cado, is,	*cecidi,*	*cadere,*	*casum, u.*
tendo, is,	*tetendi,*	*tendere,*	*tensum, u.*
tundo, is,	*tutidi,*	*tundere,*	*tunsum, u.*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* di, *in the Pret. Tense end in* sum, *in the Supines?*

A. No. — Except. —

pedo, is,	*pepedi,*	*pedere,*	*peditum, u.*
do, das,	*dedi,*	*dare,*	*datum, u.*

Gi. Q. *How doth the Supine end, when the Pret. Tense* ends *in* gi?

A. In *Tum.* — as —

lego, is,	*legi,*	*legere,*	*lectum, u.*
pango, is,	*pegi, & pepigi,*	*pangere,*	*pactum, u.*
frango, is,	*fregi,*	*frangere,*	*fractum, u.*
tango, is,	*tetigi,*	*tangere,*	*tactum, u.*
ago, is,	*egi,*	*agere,*	*actum, u.*
pungo, is,	*pupugi,*	*pungere,*	*punctum, u.*
fugio, is,	*fugi,*	*fugere,*	*fugitum, u.*

Li. Q. *How doth the Supine end, when the Pret. Tense ends in* li?

A. In *sum.* — as —

sallo, is,	*salli,*	*sallere,*	*salsum, u.*
pello, is,	*pepuli,*	*pellere,*	*pulsum, u.*
cello, is,	*ceculi,*	*cellere,*	*culsum, u.*
fallo, is,	*fefelli,*	*fallere,*	*falsum, u.*
vello, is,	*velli,*	*vellere,*	*vulsum, u.*

Q. How

Q. *How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tense ends in* Mi, Ni, Pi *or* Qui? *Mi, Ni, Pi, Qui.*

A. In *tum* —— as ——

Pres.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
mo, is.	*emi.*	*emere.*	*emptum, u.*
venio, is.	*veni.*	*venire.*	*ventum, u.*
cano, is.	*cecini.*	*canere.*	*cantum, u.*
capio, is.	*cepi.*	*capere.*	*captum, u.*
cupio, is.	*cupi.*	*cupere.*	*cuptum, u.*
rumpo, is.	*rupi.*	*rumpere.*	*ruptum, u.*
linquo, is.	*liqui.*	*linquere.*	*lictum, u.*

Q. *When the Preter Tense ends in* Ri, *how must the Supine end?* *Ri.*

A. In *Sum* —— as ——

verro, is.	*verri.*	*verrere.*	*versum, u.*

Q. *Doth the Supine always end in* Sum, *when the Preter Tense ends in* Ri?

A. No —— Except ——

pario, is.	*peperi.*	*parere.*	*partum, u.*

Q. *How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tense ends in* Si? *Si.*

A. In *Sum* —— as ——

viso, is.	*visi.*	*visere.*	*visum, u.*
mitto, is.	*misi.*	*mittere.*	*missum, u.*

Q. *Doth*

Q. *Doth the Supine always end in* Sum, *when the Preter Tenſe ends in* Si?

A. No —— Except ——

Preſ.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
fulcio, is.	*fulſi.*	*fulcire.*	*fultum, u.*
haurio, is.	*hauſi.*	*haurire.*	*hauſtum.*
ſarcio, is.	*ſarſi.*	*ſarcire.*	*ſartum.*
farcio, is.	*farſi.*	*farcire.*	*fartum.*
uro, is.	*uſſi.*	*urere.*	*uſtum.*
gero, is.	*geſſi.*	*gerere.*	*geſtum.*
torqueo, es.	*torſi.*	*torquere.*	*tortum,* & *torſum.*
indulgeo, es.	*indulſi.*	*indulgere.*	*indultum,* & *indulſum.*

Pſi. Q. *How do the Supines end, when the Preter Tenſe ends in* Pſi.

A. In Ptum —— as ——

ſcribo, is.	*ſcripſi.*	*ſcribere.*	*ſcriptum.*

Q. *Doth the Supine always end in* Ptum, *when the Preter Tenſe ends in* Pſi.

A. No —— Except ——

cambio, is.	*campſi.*	*cambire.*	*campſum.*

Ti. Q. *How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tenſe ends in* Ti?

A. In Tum —— as ——

ſto, ſtas.	*ſteti.*	*ſtare.*	*ſtatum, u.*
ſiſto, is.	*ſtiti.*	*ſiſtere.*	*ſtatum, u.*

Q. Doth

Q. *Doth the Supine always end in* Tum, *when the Preter Tenſe ends in* Ti?

A. No——Except——

Pref.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
verto, is.	*verti.*	*vertere.*	*verſum, u.*

Q. *How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tenſe ends in* Vi?

A. In *Tum*——as——

o, flas,	*flavi,*	*flare,*	*flatum, u.*
co, ſcis,	*pavi,*	*paſcere,*	*paſtum, u.*
o, as,	*lavi,*	*lavare,*	*lotum, &c.*
veo, es,	*favi,*	*favere,*	*fautum, u.*
veo, es,	*cavi,*	*cavere,*	*cautum, u.*
o, is,	*ſevi,*	*ſerere,*	*ſatum, u.*
m, is,	*livi, & lini,*	*linere,*	*litum.*
vo, is,	*ſolvi,*	*ſolvere,*	*ſolutum, u.*
o, is,	*volvi,*	*volvere,*	*volutum.*
gultio, is,	*ſingultivi,*	*ſingultire,*	*ſingultum.*
pelio, is,	*ſepelivi,*	*ſepelire,*	*ſepultum.*

Q. *Doth the Supine always end in* Tum, *when the Preter Tenſe ends in* Vi?

A. No——Except——

neo, is,	*vænivi,*	*vænire,*	*vænum, u.*

Q. *How doth the Supine end, when the Preter-Tenſe ends in* Ui?

A. In *Itum.*——as——

mo, as,	*domui,*	*domare,*	*domitum.*

Q. *Do*

Q. *Do all Supines end in* Itum, *when the Pret. Tenſe ends in* Ui ?

A. No; Except Verbs that end in *Vo* in the Pref. and *Vi* in the Preter Tenſe, ſhall end in *Vtum*, in the Supine —— as ——

Pref.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
exuo, is,	*exui,*	*exuere,*	*exutum,*

Q. *Do all Verbs that end in* Uo *in the Preſent Tenſe and* Ui *in the Preter Tenſe, end in* Utum *in the Supine ?*

A. No —— Except ——

ruo, is,	*rui,*	*ruere,*	*ruitum,*

Q. *Do all other Verbs that end in* Ui *in the Preter Tenſe, end in* Utum *in the Supine ?*

A. No —— Except ——

ſeco, as,	*ſecui,*	*ſecare,*	*ſectum,*
neco, as,	*necui,*	*necare,*	*nectum,*
frico, as,	*fricui,*	*fricare,*	*frictum,*
miſceo, es,	*miſcui,*	*miſcere,*	*miſtum,*
amicio, is,	*amicui,*	*amicire,*	*amictum,*
torreo, es,	*torrui,*	*torrere,*	*toſtum,*
doceo, es,	*docui,*	*docere,*	*doctum,*
teneo, es,	*tenui,*	*tenere,*	*tentum,*
conſulo, is,	*conſului,*	*conſulere,*	*conſultum,*
alo, is,	*alui,*	*alere,*	*altum,* & *alitum,*
ſalio, is,	*ſalui,*	*ſalire,*	*ſaltum,*
colo, is,	*colui,*	*colere,*	*cultum,*
occulo, is,	*occului,*	*occulere,*	*occultum,*
pinſo, is,	*pinſui,*	*pinſere,*	*piſtum,*
rapio, is,	*rapui,*	*rapere,*	*raptum,*
ſero, is,	*ſerui,*	*ſerere,*	*ſertum,*
texo, is,	*texui,*	*texere,*	*textum,*

Q. *What Verbs make* Sum *in the Supine, when the Preter Tenſe ends in* ui.

A. Theſe following ——

Preſ.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
enſeo, es,	*cenſui,*	*cenſere,*	*cenſum, u.*
cello, is,	*cellui,*	*cellere,*	*celſum, u.*
meſſo, is,	*meſſui,*	*metere,*	*meſſum.*
pateo, es,	*patui,*	*patere,*	*paſſum.*
careo, es,	*carui,*	*carere,*	*caſſum.*

except theſe two ——

nexo, ŭ,	*nexui,*	*nexere,*	*nexum.*
pexo, ŭ,	*pexui,*	*pexere,*	*pexum.*

Q. *How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tenſe ends in* xi?

A. In *ctum* —— as ——

vincio, ĭs,	*vinxi,*	*vincire,*	*vinctum.*

theſe five following caſt away *n* from the Supine, as —

fingo, is,	*finxi,*	*fingere,*	*fictum.*
mingo, is,	*minxi,*	*mingere,*	*mictum.*
pingo, is,	*pinxi,*	*pingere,*	*pictum.*
ſtringo, is,	*ſtrinxi,*	*ſtringere,*	*ſtrictum.*
ringo, is,	*rinxi,*	*ringere,*	*rictum.*

Q. *Do all Supines end in* ctum, *when the Preter Tenſe ends in* xi?

A. No —— Except ——

flecto, is,	*flexi,*	*flectere,*	*flexum.*
plecto, is,	*plexi,*	*plectere,*	*plexum.*
figo, is,	*fixi,*	*figere,*	*fixum.*
fluo, is,	*fluxi,*	*fluere,*	*fluxum.*

Of

Of the Supines of Compound Verbs.

Compositum ut simplex, &c.

Q. *What Supines have Compound Verbs?*

A. The same Supine (generally) which Simple Verbs have——as——

lego, the Simple Verb makes *lectum*.
diligo, the Compound makes *dilectum*.

Q. *Is there always the same Syllable to them both?*

A. No——for——

Quamvis non eadem.

1. The Compounds of *tunsum*, from *tundo*, make *tusum*, in the Supine, casting away *n*, as—*contusum*.

2. The Compounds of *rutum*, from *ruo*, make *rutum* in the Supines, by casting away *i*, ——as——*rutum*.

3. The Compounds of *saltum*, from *salio*, make *sultum*, in the Supines, by changing *a* into *u*, ——as——*resultum*.

4. The Compounds of *sertum*, from *sero*, make *situm* by changing *e* into *i*,——as——*insitum*.

Q. *What Supines, when they be compounded, change a into e?*

A. These following——as——

Hæc captum factum.

captum, the Simple makes		*inceptum.*
factum,		*defectum.*
jactum,		*injectum.*
raptum,	The Simple makes the Compound	*direptum.*
cantum,		*concentum.*
partum,		*impertum.*
sparsum,		*respersum.*
carptum,		*decerptum.*
fartum,		*refertum.*

Q.

Q. *What doth the Verb* edo, *to eat, when it is compounded, make in the Supine?*

A. The Verb *edo*, when 'tis compounded, doth not make *eſtum* but *eſum* in the Supine; except *comedo*, which makes both *eſum* and *eſum*—as—*comedo, edis vel es, comedi, edere vel eſſe, comedendi, do, dum, comeſum, eſu, & comeſtum, edens, eſurus & eſturus.* *Verbum edo com.*

Q. *What do you ſay of the Compounds of* noſco?

A. Theſe two Compounds of *noſco* make *cognitum* and *agnitum* in the Supine, *A noſco tantum.*

Pret.	Pret:	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
noſco, is,	*cognovi,*	*cognoſcere,*	*cognitum.*
noſco, is,	*agnovi,*	*agnoſcere,*	*agnitum.*

Q. *What Supines do all the other Compounds of noſco make?*

A. All the other Compounds of *noſco*, make *notum* in the Supine—as— *Cæteva dant notum.*

noſco, is,	*ignovi,*	*ignoſcere,*	*ignotum.*

Of

Of the Preterperfect Tenſe of Verbs in *or*.

Q. *From whence do Verbs in* or *take their Preter Tenſe?*

Verba in or.

A. Verbs in *or* have no Preter Tenſe of their own, but do take their Preter Tenſe from the latter Supine by changing *us* into *i*, and by joyning *ſum vel fui* to it — as from the latter Supine, by putting thereto *s*, and *ſum vel fui*, is formed the Preter Tenſe of the Verb Paſſive *legor*.

Q. *Give an Example?*

Preſent Tenſe.	Preter Tenſe.
Infin. Part.	Part.

A. Legor, legĕris, vel legĕre; lectus ſum vel fui, legi, lectus, legendus.

Q. *Are all Verbs in* or *Verbs Paſſives?*

A: horum nunc eſt deponens.

A. No; as ſome are Paſſives, ſo ſome are Verbs Deponent and ſome Common, the difference between which, is ſet down in the Examination of Verbs. I ſhall only note in this place, that Verbs Deponent and Common have Gerunds and Supines like Actives.

Q. *Give ſome Examples.*

A. Labor, laberis vel labĕre, lapſus ſum vel fui, labi, labendi, do, dum, lapſum, labens, lapſurus — to ſlide.

Con. 3.

3. *Patior, pateris vel patĕre, paſſus ſum vel fui, pati, patiendi, do, dum, paſſum, ſu, patiens, paſſurus* — to endure.

3. *Perpetior, perpeteris vel perpetĕre, perpeſſus ſum vel fui, perpeti, perpetiendi, do, dum, perpeſſum, petiens, ſurus* — to ſuffer throughly.

2. *Fate-*

Fateor, fatĕris vel fatēre, fassus sum vel fui, ri, fatendi, do, dum, fassum, u, fatens, fassurus, grant.

Confiteor, tĕris vel tēre, confessus sum vel fui, tēri, tendi, do, dum, confessum, u, confitens, curus — to confess.

Diffiteor, teris vel tēre, diffessus sum vel fui, ēri, tendi, do, dum, diffessum, u, diffitens, diffessu- — to deny.

Gradior, graderis vel dĕre, gressus sum vel fui, di, diendi, do, dum, gressum, gressu, gradiens, gressu- — to go.

Digredior, digrederis vel dĕre, digressus sum vel digredi, digrediendi, do, dum, digressum, gressu, diens, gressurus — to turn aside.

Fatiscor, cĕris vel cĕre, fessus sum vel fui, fa- ci, cendi, do, dum, fessum, u, faviscens, fessurus — be weary.

Metior, metĕris vel tĕre, mensus sum vel fui, meti, tiendi, do, dum, mensum, u, metens, mensurus, — measure.

Utor, utĕris vel utĕre, usus sum vel fui, uti, utendi, dum, usum, u, utens, usurus — to use.

Ordior, ordīris vel ordīre, orditus sum vel fui, ri, ordiendi, do, dum, orditum, u, ordiens, orditurus, to weave.

Ordior, dīris vel ordīre, orsus sum vel fui, ri, ordiendi, do, dum, orsum, u, ordiens, orsurus — begin.

Nitor, nitĕris vel tĕre, nisus vel nixus sum vel niti, nitendi, do, dum, nisum, u, vel nixum, u; us, nisurus vel nixurus — to endeavour.

Ulciscor, ciscĕris vel ciscĕre, ultus sum vel fui, ci, ciscendi, do, dum, ultum, u, ulciscens, ulturus — venge.

Irascor, rascĕris vel rascĕre, iratus sum vel fui, ci, cendi, do, dum, iratum, u, irascens, iraturus — be angry.

2. Reor,

2. *Reor, reris vel rere, ratus sum vel fui, re-
rendi, do, dum, ratum, ratu, rens, raturus*——
suppose.

3. *Obliviscor, viscĕris vel viscĕre, oblitus sum vel
fui, oblivisci, obliviscendi, do, dum, oblitum, u, obli-
viscens, obliturus*——to forget.

3. *Fruor, ĕris vel ĕre, fructus vel fruitus sum vel
fui, frui, fruendi, do, dum, fructum, u, vel fruitum, u,
fruens, fructurus & fruiturus*——to enjoy.

2. *Misereor, serēris vel serēre, misertus sum vel fui,
miserēri, miserendi, do, dum, misertum, u, miserens,
miserturus*——to pity.

3. *Tuor, tuĕris vel tuĕre, tuitus sum vel fui, tuēri,
tuendi, do, dum, tutum, u, vel tuitum, u, tuens, tuturus,
vel tuiturus*——to see.

2. *Tueor, tuēris vel tuēre, tuitus sum vel fui, tuēri,
tuendi, do, dum, tutum, u, & tuitum, u, tuens, tuturus,
& tuiturus,*——to defend.

3. *Loquor, loquĕris vel loquĕre, locutus sum vel fui,
loqui, loquendi, do, dum, locutum, tu, loquens, locu-
turus*——to speak.

3. *Sequor, sequĕris vel sequĕre, secutus sum vel fui,
sequendi, do, dum, secutum, tu, sequens, secuturus*——
to follow.

4. *Experior, experīris vel experīre, expertus sum
vel fui, experiri, experiendi, do, dum, expertum, u,
experiens, experturus*——to try.

3. *Paciscor, paciscĕris vel paciscĕre, pactus sum vel
fui, pacisci, paciscendi, do, dum; pactum, u, paciscens,
pacturus*——to make a bargain.

3. *Nanciscor, ciscĕris vel ciscĕre, nactus sum vel fui,
nancisci, nanciscendi, do, dum, nactum, u, nanciscens,
nacturus*——to get.

3. *Apiscor, apiscĕris vel apiscĕre, aptus sum vel fui,
apisci, apiscendi, do, dum, aptum, u, apiscens, apti-
rus*——to obtain.

3. *Adipisc*

3. *Adipiſcor, adipiſcĕris vel adipiſcĕre, adeptus ſum vel fui, adipiſci, adipiſcendi, do, dum, adeptum, u, adipiſcens, adepturus* —— to get.

3. *Queror, querĕris vel querĕre, queſtus ſum vel fui, queri, querendi, do, dum, queſtum, u, querens, queſturus* —— to complain.

3. *Proficiſcor, ciſcĕris vel ciſcĕre, profectus ſum vel fui, proficiſci, proficiſcendi, do, dum, profectum, u, proficiſcens, profecturus* —— to go forward.

3. *Expergiſcor, giſcĕris vel giſcĕre, experrectus ſum vel fui, expergiſcendi, do, dum, experrectum, u, expergiſcens, experrecturus* —— to ariſe.

3. *Comminiſcor, niſcĕris vel niſcĕre, commentus ſum vel fui, comminiſci, comminiſcendi, do, dum, commentum, u, comminiſcens, commenturus* —— to deviſe.

3. *Naſcor, naſcĕris vel naſcĕre, natus ſum vel fui, naſci, naſcendi, do, dum, natum, u, naſcens, naturus* —— to be born.

3. *Morior, moriĕris vel moriĕre, & morĕris vel morĕre, mortuus ſum vel fui, mori, moriendi, do, dum, ſupinis caret, moriens, mortuus, moriturus, moriendus,* —to die.

4. *Orior, orīris vel orīre, ortus ſum vel fui, orīri, oriendi, do, dum, ortum, ortu, oriens, orturus* —— to ariſe.

Præteritum Activæ & Passivæ.

Q. WHat *Verbs have two Preterperfect Tenses, the one of the Active, and the other of the Passive Voice?*

A. These that follow.

Con. Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
1. Cæno, nas, to sup.	cænavi & cænatus sum vel fui,	cænare,	cænatum.
1. juro, as, to swear.	juravi & juratus sum vel fui,	jurare,	juratum.
1. poto, as, to drink.	potavi & potus sum vel fui,	potare,	otum, atum.
1. titubo, as, to stumble.	titubavi & titubatus sum vel fui,	titubare,	titubatum.
2. careo, es, to want.	carui, & cassus sum vel fui,	carere.	cassum, & caritum.
2. prandeo, es, to dine.	prandi & pransus sum vel fui,	prandere,	pransum.
2. pateo, es, to lie open.	patui & passus sum vel fui,	patere,	passum.
2. placeo, es, to please.	placui & placitus sum vel fui,	placere,	placitum.
3. suesco, is, to accustom.	suevi & suetus sum vel fui,	suescere,	suetum.

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
4. *veneo, is,* to be sold.	*venivi* & *venditus sum vel fui,*	*venire,*	*venum.*
3. *nubo, is,* to be married.	*nupsi* & *nuptus sum vel fui,*	*nubere,*	*nuptum.*
2. *mereor, eris, vel erere,* to deserve.	*meritus sum vel fui, vel merui,*	*mereri,*	*meritum.*

Q. *What Impersonals may be added to these, which have two Pret. Tenses, one of the Active, and the other of the Passive Voice?* *Adde libet, &c.*

A. These following, —— *libet, licet.*
2. *Tædet, pudet* and *piget,* as ——

2. *Libet.* Pres. Tense.
libebat. Preterim.
libuit & *libitum est vel fuit.* Pret.
libuerat, & *libitum erat vel fuerat,* Pret. Plus.
libebit. Future.
libere. Infin. Mood, it contenteth or liketh.

2. *Licet.* Pres. Tense.
licebat. Preterim.
licuit & *licitum est vel fuit.* Pret.
licuerat, & *licitum erat vel fuerat.* Pret. plu.
licebit. Future.
licere. Infin. it is lawful.

2. *Tædet.* Pres.
tædebat. Pret. Im.
tæduit, & *pertæsum est vel fuit.* Pret.
tæduerat, & *pertæsum erat vel fuerat.* Pret. plu.
tædebit. Future.
tædere. Infin. it irketh.

2. *Pudet.* Pref. Tenſe.
pudebat. Pret. Im.
puduit, & puditum eſt vel fuit. Pret.
puduerat, & puditum erat vel fuerat. Pret. plu.
pudebit. Future.
pudere. Infin. it ſhameth.

2. *Piget.* Pref.
pigebat. Pret. Im.
piguit, & pigitum eſt vel fuit. Pret.
piguerat, & pigitum erat vel fuerat. Pret. plu.
pigebit. Future.
pigere. Infin. it grieveth.

Of the Preterperfect Tenſe of Verbs Neuters Paſſives.

Q. WHat Preterperfect Tenſe, have Verbs Neuters Paſſives?

Neutro paſſivum.

A. A Verb Neuter Paſſive hath the Paſſives Pret. Tenſe. — as —

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
2 *gaudeo, es,* to be glad.	*gaviſus ſum vel fui,*	*gaudere,*	*gaviſum.*
3. *fido, is,* to truſt.	*fiſus ſum vel fui,*	*fidere,*	*fiſum.*
2. *audeo, es,* to dare.	*auſus ſum vel fui,*	*audere,*	*auſum.*
fio, fis, to be made.	*factus ſum vel fui,*	*fieri,*	*factus, faciendus.*
2. *ſoleo, es,* to be wont.	*ſolitus ſum vel fui,*	*ſolere,*	*ſolitum.*

Of

Of Verbs that borrow their Pret. Tenſe from other Verbs.

Q. *What Verbs borrow their Pret. Tenſe from others.* *Quædam Preteritum.*

A. Theſe that follow. Verbs Inceptives in *ſco*, take their Pret. Tenſe, from their Primitive Verbs, and ſtand for the ſame Primitive Verbs from whence they borrow their Pret. Tenſe. — as ———

Tepeſco, to begin to be warm.	*tepeo*, to be warm.
ferveſco, to begin to be hot.	*ferveo*, to be hot.
alſo *cerno*, to diſcern.	*video*, to ſee.
quatio, to ſhake.	*concutio*, to ſhake.
ferio, to ſmite.	*percutio*, to ſmite.
meio, to piſs.	*mingo*, to piſs.
ſido, to ſit.	*ſedeo*, to ſit.
tollo, to lift up.	*ſuffero*, to bear.
ſum, to be.	*fuo*, to be.
fero, to bear.	*tulo*, to bear.
ſiſto, to make to ſtand.	*ſto*, to ſtand.
furo, to be mad.	*inſanio*, to be mad.
veſcor, to feed.	*paſcor*, to be fed.
medeor, to heal.	*medicor*, to be healed.
liquor, to melt.	*liqueſio*, to be melted.
reminiſcor, to remember.	*recordor*, to be remembred.

Q. *How are theſe Verbs declined?*

A.

Preſ.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
3. *tepeſco, is,*	*tepui,*	*tepeſcere,*	*caret.*
3. *ferveſco, is*	*fervi,*	*ferveſcere,*	*caret.*
3. *cerno, is,*	*vidi,*	*cernere,*	*viſum.*
3. *quatio, is,*	*concuſſi,*	*quatere,*	*concuſſum.*
4. *ferio, is,*	*percuſſi,*	*ferire,*	*percuſſum.*
3. *meio, is,*	*minxi,*	*meere,*	*mictum.*
3. *ſido, is,*	*ſedi,*	*ſidere,*	*ſeſſum.*
3. *tollo, is,*	*ſuſtuli,*	*tollere,*	*ſublatum.*
ſum, es,	*fui,*	*eſſe, futurus,*	
fero, fers,	*tuli,*	*ferre,*	*latum.*
3. *ſiſto, is,*	*ſtiti,*	*ſiſtere,*	*ſtatum.*
3. *furo, is,*	*inſanivi,*	*furere,*	*careo.*
veſcor,	*paſtus*	*veſci,*	*paſtum.*
3. *veſcere,*	*ſum*		
vel cere.	*vel fui,*		
2. *medeor,*	*medicatus*	*mederi,*	*medicatum.*
eris vel ere,	*ſum vel fui,*		
3. *liquor,*	*liquefactus*	*liqui,*	*liquefactum*
eris vel ere,	*ſum vel fui,*		
3. *reminiſcor*	*recordatus*	*reminiſci,*	*recordatum.*
eris, vel ere,	*ſum vel fui,*		

Of Verbs wanting their Preterperfect Tenſe.

Q. *WHat Verbs want their Pret. Tenſe?*

A. Theſe following, ——

Preſ.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
3. *vergo, is,*		*vergere,*	
3. *ambigo, is,*		*ambigere,*	
3. *gliſco, is,*		*gliſcere,*	
3. *fatiſco, is,*	*caret.*	*fatiſcere,*	*caret.*
2. *polleo, es,*		*pollere,*	
2. *nideo, es,*		*nidere,*	

Q. *What other Verbs do want the Preter Tenſe?*

A. Verbs Inceptives do alſo want the Preter Tenſe. —— as —— *Ad hæc inceptiva.*

puераſco, is,	*caret,*	*puераſcere,*	*caret.*

All Verbs Paſſives want their Preter Tenſe, when their Actives want the Supines. —— as —— *Et paſſiva quibus.*

3. *Metuor, eris vel ere*; Pret. *caret, metui, metuendus*; from the Active *metuo*, which wants the Supines.

2. *Timeor, eris vel ere*; Pret. *caret, timeri, timendus*; from the Active *timeo*, which wants the Supines.

Q. *How comes it to paſs, that all Verbs Paſſives want the Preter Tenſe, whoſe Actives want the Supines?*

A. Becauſe Verbs Paſſives form (or borrow) their Preter Tenſe from the latter Supine, ſo that if the Supines be wanting, there can be nothing from whence the Verb Paſſive may form (or borrow) its Preter Tenſe.

Q. *Do no other Verbs want the Preter?*

Meditativa omnia.

All Meditatives do want the Preter Tense, except ——

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
4. *parturio, is,*	*parturivi,*	*parturire,*	*parturitum.*
4. *esurio, is,*	*esurivi,*	*esurire,*	*esuritum.*

Of Verbs that want their Supines.

Q. *What is the meaning of this Rule,* Hæc raro aut nunquam?

A. These Verbs following, seldom or never have their Supines. —— as ——

Con.			
3. *lambo, is,*	*lambi,*	*lambere,*	
1. *mico, as,*	*micui,*	*micare,*	
3. *rudo, is,*	*rudi,*	*rudere,*	
3. *scabo, is,*	*scabi,*	*scabere,*	
3. *parco, is,*	*peperci,*	*parcere,*	
3. *dispesco, is,*	*dispescui,*	*dispescere,*	
3. *posco, is,*	*popoſci,*	*poscere,*	
3. *disco, is,*	*didici,*	*discere,*	
3. *compesco, is*	*compescui,*	*compescere,*	
3. *quinisco, is*	*quexi,*	*quinisсere,*	Supinis
3. *dego, is,*	*degi,*	*degere,*	*caret.*
3. *ango, is,*	*anxi,*	*angere,*	
3. *fugo, is,*	*fuxi,*	*fugere,*	
3. *lingo, is,*	*linxi,*	*lingere,*	
3. *ningo, is,*	*ninxi,*	*ningere,*	
3. *satago, is,*	*sategi,*	*satagere,*	
3. *psallo, is,*	*psalli,*	*psallere,*	
volo, vis,	*volui,*	*velle,*	
nolo, nonvis,	*nolui,*	*nolle,*	
malo, vis,	*malui,*	*malle,*	
3. *tremo, is,*	*tremui,*	*tremere,*	
2. *strideo, es,*	*stridi,*	*stridere,*	

3. *strid*

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	
3. *ſtrido, is,*	*ſtridi,*	*ſtridere,*	
2. *flaveo, es,*	*flavi,*	*flavere,*	
2. *liveo, es,*	*livi,*	*livere,*	Supinis
2. *aveo, es,*	*avi,*	*avere,*	*caret.*
2. *paveo, es,*	*pavi,*	*pavere,*	
2. *conniveo, es,*	*connivi,*	*connivere,*	
2. *ferveo, es,*	*fervi,*	*fervere,*	

Q. *What other Verbs want the Supines?*

A. The Compounds of *nuo*, do want the Supines. — as —

3. *renuo, is,*	*renui,*	*renuere,*	*caret.*	*A nuo comp.*

Alſo, the Compounds of *cado*, — as —

3. *incido, is,*	*incidi,*	*incidere,*	*caret.*	*A cado in cido.*

Q. *Do all the Compounds of* cado, *want the Supines?*

A. No, except *occido*, and *recido*: — as —

3. *occido, dis,*	*occidi,*	*occidere,*	*occaſum.*
3. *recido, dis,*	*recidi,*	*recidere,*	*recaſum.*
3. *reſpuo, is,*	*reſpui,*	*reſpuere,*	
3. *luo, is,*	*lui,*	*luere,*	
3. *metuo, is,*	*metui,*	*metuere,*	
3. *cluo, is,*	*clui,*	*cluere,*	Supinis
2. *frigeo, es,*	*frixi,*	*frigere,*	
2. *calvo, is,*	*calvi,*	*calvere,*	*caret.*
3. *ſterto, is,*	*ſtertui,*	*ſtertere,*	
2. *timeo,*	*timui,*	*timere,*	
2. *luceo, es,*	*luxi,*	*lucere,*	
2. *arceo, es,*	*arcui,*	*arcere,*	

Q. *But do the Compounds of* arceo, *want the Supines?*

A. No, the Compounds of *arceo*, make *ercitum* in the Supines. — as —

2. *coerceo, es,*	*coercui,*	*coercere,*	*coercitum.*

So the Compounds of *gruo*. —— as ——

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
3. *ingruo, is,*	*ingrui,*	*ingruere,*	*ingruitum.*

Q. *What is the meaning of this Rule,* Et quæcunque in *ui*?

A. Verbs Neuters of the second Conjugation that make *ui*, in the Preter Tense want the Supines; except these following, *oleo, doleo, placeo, taceo, pareo, careo, noceo, pateo, lateo, valeo,* and *caleo*, which have the Supines.

Q. *Decline the aforesaid words?*

A.

2. *oleo, es,*	*olui,*	*olere,*	*olitum, e.*
2. *doleo, es,*	*dolui,*	*dolere,*	*dolitum.*
2. *placeo, es,*	*placui* & *placitus sum* vel *fui,*	*placere,*	*placitum.*
2. *taceo, es,*	*tacui,*	*tacere,*	*tacitum.*
2. *pareo, es,*	*parui,*	*parere,*	*paritum.*
2. *careo, es,*	*carui* & *cassus sum* vel *fui,*	*carere,*	*cassum.* & *caritum.*
2. *noceo, es,*	*nocui,*	*nocere,*	*nocitum.*
2. *pateo, es,*	*patui* & *passus sum* vel *fui,*	*patere,*	*passum.*
2. *lateo, es,*	*latui,*	*latere,*	*latitum.*
2. *valeo, es,*	*valui,*	*valere,*	*valitum.*
2. *caleo, es,*	*calui,*	*calere,*	*calitum.*

Syntaxis Explained.

Q. WHat is Syntaxis?

A. It is a due connexion and coherence of the Parts of Speech between themselves, according to the Use of the most approved Authors.

The Verb Personal agrees with its Nominative Case in the same Number, and same Person, as *nunquam sera est ad bonos mores via*; *est* is the Verb Personal agrees with the Nominative Case *Via*. Rule 1. *Verbum Personale.*

The Nominative Case of the first or second Person, is seldom exprest, except it be for distinction or Emphasis sake; as *vos damnastis*; *damnastis* is a Verb of the second Person agrees with its Nominative Case, *Vos*, being exprest. Rule 2. *Nominativus primæ vel secundæ Personæ.*

In Verbs whose signification belongs to Men, the Nominative Case of the third Person is oftentimes understood; as *fertur atrocia flagitia designasse*; *fertur* is a Verb of the third Person, agreeing with its Nominative Case *ille*, which is understood. Rule 3. *In verbis quorum significatio ad homines.*

Q. *How many ways will a Verb agree with its (or have a) Nominative Case?*

A. Six ways.

Q. *Give some examples?*

A. 1. The casual word, as is exprest in the first Rule *Verbum Personale.*

2. Sometimes a Verb of the Infinitive Mood, is put instead of the Nominative Case; as, *mentiri non est meum*; *mentiri* is the Infinitive Mood, put instead of the Nominative Case to the Verb, *est*. Rule 4. *N[illegible] per vox[illegible] lis.*

3. Sor

Rule 5. *Aliquando orati.*

3. Sometimes an whole Sentence is put instead of the Nominative Case to the Verb; as, *Ingenuas didicisse fideliter artes emollit*; *emollit* doth agree with the whole Sentence *Ingenuas didicisse fideliter artes*, which is put instead of its Nominative Case.

4. Sometimes part of a Sentence is put for the Nominative Case to the Verb; as—*Amare mundum præ Deo, turpissimum est*: *Amare mundum* is part of a Sentence put for the Nominative Case to the Verb *est*.

5. Sometimes the word Absolute is put for the Nominative Case to the Verb, as, *ſt*, *est nota vocandi*: *Est* is the Verb agrees with *ſt*, which is put for the Nominative Case.

Rule 6. *Aliquando adverbium cum genitivo.*

6. Sometimes an Adverb with a Genitive Case, is put for the Nominative Case to the Verb; as—*Partim virorum ceciderunt*: The Verb *ceciderunt* agrees with *partim virorum*, which is put instead of the Nominative.

Rule 7. *Verbus infinitivi modi.*

Verbs of the Infinitive Mood will have before them an Accusative Case instead of a Nominative; as—*Te rediisse incolumem gaudeo*: *Te* is the Accusative Case, comes before the Infinitive Mood *rediisse*.

Rule 8. *Resolvi potest hic modus.*

But this Infinitive Mood may be turned into the Indicative, by adding the Conjunction, *quod* or *ut*; as—for *Te rediisse incolumem gaudeo*, we may say, *Quod tu rediisti incolumem gaudeo*: *Rediisti* is the Indicative agrees with the Nominative Case *tu*, because *quod* is added.

Rule 9.

A Verb placed between two Nominative Cases of diverse Numbers, may agree with either of them, if the Nominative Cases the same Person; as—*Amantium iræ, amoris redintegratio est*; or you may say, *Amantium iræ amoris redintegratio sunt*: *Est* is the Verb placed between

two

two Nominative Cases of divers Numbers *iræ* and *redintegratio*, and agrees with the Nominative Case *redintegratio*; or *sunt* is the Verb placed between the two said Nominative Cases, and agrees with the Nominative *iræ*.

Rule 10. *Verbum impersonale.*

A Verb Impersonal hath no Nominative Case before it; as—*Tædet me vitæ*: *Tædet* is a Verb Impersonal put without a Nominative Case.

Rule 11. *Nomen multitudinis.*

A Noun of multitude of the Singular Number, will have a Verb Plural to agree with it; as—*Pars abiere*: *Abiere* is the Verb Plural, agrees with the Nominative Case *pars*; which, tho it be of the Singular Number by Declension, yet being a Noun Collective, is the Plural Number by signification.

Rule 12. *Adjectivum cum Substantivo.*

The Adjective agrees with its Substantive in the same Case, Gender and Number; as—*Rara avis in terris*: *Rara* is the Adjective, agrees with the Substantive *avis*.

Rule 13. *Ad eundem modum participia, &c.*

Participles and Pronouns do also agree with Substantives in Case, Gender and Number; as—*Nullus ad amissas ibit amissu opes*: *Amissas* is the Participle agrees with the Substantive *opes*, *&c.*

Rule 14. *Aliquando oratio.*

Sometimes a Sentence is put instead of the Substantive, with which the Adjective *&c.* agrees, as if it were a Substantive; as—*Audito regem doroberniam proficiſci*: *Audito* is the Participle agrees with the whole Sentence, *Regem doroberniam proficiſci*.

Note, That an Adjective, *&c.* will have a Substantive as many ways, as a Verb will have a Nominative Case.

The

Rule 15. *Relativum cum antecedente.*

The Relative agrees with the Antecedent in Gender, Number, and Perſon; as, *Vir bonus eſt quis? qui*, &c. *qui* the Relative agrees with its Antecedent *Vir*.

Rule 16. *Nec unica vox ſolum.*

Sometimes an whole Sentence is put inſtead of the Antecedent; as, *in tempore ad eum veni, quod omnium rerum primum; quod* is the Relative agrees with the Sentence *in tempore ad eum veni*.

Note, that a Relative will have an Antecedent as many ways, as an Adjective will have a Subſtantive.

Rule 17. *Relativum inter duo antecedentia.*

A Relative placed between two Antecedents of divers Genders, ſometimes agrees with the former; as, *Senatus aſſiduam ſtationem, eò loci peragebat, qui hodie ſenaculum appellatur; qui* is the Relative placed between two Antecedents, *loci* and *ſenaculum*, and agrees with the former *loci*.

Rule. 18. *Nunc cum poſteriori.*

Sometimes a Relative placed between two Antecedents of divers Genders, agrees with the latter; as, *homines tuentur illum globum, quæ terra dicitur; quæ*, is the Relative placed between two Antecedents *globum* and *terra*, and agrees with the latter *terra*.

Rule 19. *Aliquando Relativum.*

Sometimes a Relative, and ſometimes a Noun Adjective hath Relation to the Primitive, which is underſtood in the Poſſeſſive; as *omnes omnia bona dicere, & laudare fortunas meas, qui filium haberem*, &c. *qui* is a Relative hath relation to the Primitive, *mei*, which is underſtood in the Poſſeſſive, *meas*.

When

When there comes no Nominative Case between the Relative and the Verb, the Relative shall be the Nominative Case to the Verb; as, *felix qui potuit boni fontem visere lucidum*; *qui*, is the Nominative Case comes before the Verb *potuit*.

Rule 20. *Quoties nullus Nom.*

But if a Nominative Case comes between the Relative and the Verb, the Relative shall be governed of the Verb, or of some other word, which is placed in the same Sentence; as, *gratia ab officio, quod mora tardat, abest*; *quod*, the Relative is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *tardat*.

Rule 21. *At si Nominativus.*

Substantivorum constructio.

When two Substantives come together with this sign [*of*] between them, the latter of those Substantives shall be put in the Genitive Case; as, *crescit amor nummi*, &c. *nummi* is the Genitive Case, the latter of two Substantives, *amor* is the former.

Rule 22. *Quum duo Substantiva.*

The Genitive Case is oftentimes turn'd into an Adjective Possessive; as, *patris domus*, into *paterna domus*; *paterna*, is the Adjective Possessive agrees with the Substantive *domus*.

Rule 23. *Proinde hic Genitivus.*

Sometimes the Genitive Case is turned into a Dative; as, for *urbis pater* we read *urbi pater*; *urbi* is the Dative Case, governed of the Substantive *pater*.

Rule 24. *Est etiam ubi in Dativum.*

When the Substantives signifie, or belong to the same thing, they shall be put in the same Case by apposition; as, *effodiuntur opes irritamenta malorum, irritamenta* is the Nominative Case Plural, put in apposition with the Substantive *opes*.

Rule 25. *Excipiuntur quæ in eodem casu ponuntur.*

An

Rule 26. *Adjectivum in neutro genere.* An Adjective in the Neuter Gender put abſolute, that is, without a Subſtantive, will govern a Genitive Caſe; as, *paululum pecuniæ*; *pecuniæ* is the Genitive Caſe govern'd of the Adjective *paululum*.

Rule 27. *Ponitur interdum Genitivus tantum.* The Genitive Caſe is ſometimes put alone, the former Subſtantive being underſtood by the Figure *Eclypſis*; as, *abi ad Dianæ veneris*; *Dianæ* is the Genitive Caſe put alone, the Subſtantive *templum* being underſtood.

Rule 28. *Laus & vituperium.* The praiſe and diſpraiſe of any thing is uſed after Nouns in the Genitive or Ablative Caſe; as, *vir nulla fide, ingenus vultus puer*; *fide* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Subſtantive *vir*, and *vultus* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Subſtantive *puer*.

Rule 29. *Opus & Uſus Ablat.* *Opus* and *Uſus*, when they be latin for need will govern an Ablative Caſe; as, *authoritate tua, nobis opus eſt*; *authoritate* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Subſtantive *opus*.

Rule 30. *Opus autem Adjective.* When *Opus* is an Adjective, and is latin for neceſſary, it will moſt commonly govern a Dative Caſe; as, *duæ nobis & author opus eſt*; *nobis* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Adjective *opus*.

Finis regularum, quæ ad Subſtantivorum conſtructionem pertinent.

Adj.

Adjectivorum Conſtructio.

ADjectives that ſignifie deſire, ignorance, knowledge, remembrance, forgetfulneſs, and ſuch like will govern a Genitive Caſe; as, *eſt natura hominum novitatis avida*; *novitatis* is the Genitive Caſe govern'd of the Adjective *avida*. Rule 31. *Adjectiva quæ deſiderium.*

Adjectives ending in *ax*, derived from Verbs, will govern a Genitive Caſe; as, *audax ingenii*; *ingenii* is the Genitive Caſe, govern'd of the Adjective *audax*. Rule 32. *Adjectiva verbalia in* ax.

Nouns Partitives, or put partitively, and ſome Interrogatives, and certain Nouns of Number will govern a Genitive Caſe, of that Noun from whence they borrow their Gender; as, *utrum horum mavis, accipe*; *horum* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Adjective *utrum*. Rule 33. *Nomina Partitiva.*

In another ſenſe, Nouns Partitives, *&c.* will govern an Ablative Caſe with a Preſition; as, *primus ab Hercule*; *Hercule* the Ablative Caſe governed of the Adjective *primus*, and the Prepoſition *ab*. Rule 34. *In alio tamen ſenſu.*

In another ſenſe they will govern a Dative Caſe; as, *nulli pietate ſecundus*; *nulli* is the Dative Caſe, governed of the Adjective *ſecundus*. Rule 35. *In alio vero ſenſu.*

Sometimes they are uſed with one of theſe Prepoſitions; *e, de, ex, inter, ante*; as, *eſt deus è vobis alter, vobis* is the Ablative Caſe, governed of the Adjective *alter*, and the Prepoſition *e*. Rule 36. *Uſurpantur autem.*

The Queſtion and the Anſwer muſt be made by the ſame Caſe and Tenſe, that the Queſtion is asked by; as, *quarum rerum, nulla eſt ſatietas? divitiarum*; Rule 37. *Interrogativum & ejus reditivum.*

quarum

quarum is the Queſtion in the Genitive, and *divitiarum* is the Anſwer in the ſame Caſe.

Rule 38. *fallit hæc regula.*

But when the Queſtion is made by *cujus, ja, jum*, then the Queſtion and the Anſwer ſhall be put in divers Caſes; as, *cujum pecus? laniorum*; *cujum* is the Queſtion in the Genitive Caſe, and *laniorum* is the Anſwer in the Nominative.

Rule 39. *Aut per dictionem variæ Syntaxeos.*

Alſo when the Verb will govern divers Caſes, then the Queſtion and the Anſwer ſhall be put in divers Caſes; as, *tine accuſas, an homicidii? utroque*; *cujus ti* is the Queſtion in the Genitive, and *utroque* is the Anſwer in the Ablative Caſe.

Rule 40. *Fallit denique cum per poſſeſſiva.*

The Queſtion and the Anſwer may alſo be put in divers Caſes, when the Anſwer is made by any of theſe Poſſeſſives *meus, tuus, ſuus*; as, *cujus eſt hic codex meus*; *cujus* is the Queſtion in the Genitive, and *meus* is the Anſwer in the Nominative Caſe.

Rule 41. *Comparativa & Superlativa.*

Nouns of the Comparative and Superlative degree, being put partitively (that is) having this word *of*, or *among*, before them will have a Genitive Caſe.

Comparativum autem ad duo, ſuperlativum ad plura.

But the Comparative degree is referred but to two, the Superlative to more than two; as, *manuum, fortior eſt dextra, digitorum, medius eſt longiſſimus*. *manuum* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Adjective of the Comparative degree *fortior*, and *digitorum* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Adjective of the Superlative degree *longiſſimus*.

They are taken partitively, when they expounded by *e*, *ex*, or *inter*; as, *Virus poetarum doctissimus*; *poetarum* is Genitive Case governed of the Adjective *issimus*.

Rule 42. *Accipiuntur autem partitive.*

Nouns of the Comparative degree, having *than* or *by* after them, will cause the that follows either of them to be in the Ablative Case; as, *Vilius argum est auro*; *auro* is the Ablative governed of the Adjective of the Comparative degree *vilius*.

Rule 43. *Comparativa cum exponuntur per quam.*

They will also govern an Ablative Case signifying the measure of excess; as, *quanto doctior es, tanto te geras submissius*; *anto* is the Ablative Case governed of Adjective of the Comparative degree *ior*.

Rule 44. *Adeiscunt & alterum Ablativum.*

Tanto, quanto, multo, longe, ætate, are put to both degrees, that is the mparative and Superlative; as, *tanto essimus omnium poeta*; *tanto* is the ative Case governed of the Adjective *imus*.

Rule 45. *Tanto, quanto, multo, &c.*

Adjectives that signifie profit or disfit, likeness or unlikeness, pleasure or leasure, and such like, will govern a ive Case, with the sign, *to*, or *for*, af- them; as, *sis bonus, ô fælixque tuis*; is the Dative Case governed of the Adjective *is*.

Rule 46. *Adjectiva quibus commodum.*

Some Adjectives which signifie like- will govern a Dative Case; as, *quem tuis, par hujus erat*; *hujus* is the Genive Case governed of the Adjective

Rule 47. *Quædam ex his.*

Communis,

Rule 48. *Communis, alienus immunis.*

Communis, *alienus*, *immunis*, do ſer[ve] to divers Caſes; as, *commune animantium omnium eſt*, and *mors omnibus communis*; *animantium* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Adjective *commune*, and *omnibus* is the Dative, governed of the Adjective *communis*.

Rule 49. *Natus, commodus, incommodus.*

Natus, *commodus*, *incommodus*, *utilis*, &c. will govern an Accuſative Caſe with a Prepoſition; as, *natus ad gloriam*; *gloriam* is the Accuſative Caſe, governed of the Prepoſition *ad*, and the Adjective (or rather Participle) *gloriam*.

Rule 50. *Verbalia in bilis.*

Verbals in *bilis* of the Paſſive ſignification and Participles in *dus*, will govern a Dative Caſe; as, *O mihi poſt nullus Juli*, *memorande ſodales*; *mihi* is the Dative Caſe, governed of the Participle *memorande*.

Rule 51. *Magnitudinis menſura.*

Adjectives that ſignifie the length, breadth, or thickneſs of any thing will govern an Accuſative Caſe; as, *quorum ſeptem pedes longus*; *pedes* is the Accuſative Caſe govern'd of the Adjective *longus*.

Rule 52. *Interdum & in ablativo.*

Sometimes the meaſure, length, breadth, or thickneſs, is put after Adjectives in the Ablative Caſe; as, *fons*, *latus pedibus tribus*; *pedibus* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Adjective *latus*.

Rule 53. *Interdum & in genitivo.*

Sometimes the meaſure, length, breadth, or thickneſs, is put in the Genitive Caſe; as, *areas*, *pedum demum latas facito*; *pedum* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Adjective *latas*.

Adj-

Adjectives that betoken plenty or want govern an Ablative, or a Genitive of the word that hath, *of*, *in*, or before it; as, *amor & melle & fel- eſt fœcundiſſimus*; *melle* is the Abla- Caſe, governed of the Adjective *fœcundiſſimus*.

Rule 54. *Adjectiva quæ ad co- piam.*

Nouns of diverſity will govern an Ab- Caſe, with a Preposition of the word hath *from*, before it; as, *alter ab illo* is the Ablative Caſe, governed of Preposition *ab*, and the Adjective *alter*.

Rule 55. *Nomina di- verſitatis.*

Sometimes Nouns of diverſity will go- a Dative Caſe; as, *huic diverſum*; is the Dative Caſe, governed of the tive *diverſum*.

Rule 56. *Nonnun- quam etiam dativum.*

Adjectives govern an Ablative Caſe ſig- the cauſe; as, *pallidus irâ*; *irâ* is Ablative Caſe, governed of the Adje- *pallidus*.

Rule 57. *Adjectiva regunt Abl.*

The form or manner of a thing, is put Nouns in the Ablative Caſe; as, *fa- miris modis pallida*; *modis* is the tive Caſe, governed of the Adjective

Rule 58. *Forma vel modus.*

Theſe Adjectives, *dignus*, *indignus*, *itus*, *captus*, *contentus*, and *extor-* will govern an Ablative Caſe; as, *es odio*; *odio* is the Ablative Caſe, ned of the Adjective *dignus*.

Rule 59. *Dignus, in- dignus.*

Some of theſe Adjectives will go- a Genitive Caſe; as, *Militia eſt ope- era digna tui*; *operis* is the Geni- Caſe, governed of the Adjective

Rule 60. *Horum nonnulla genit.*

Prono-

Pronominum Conſtructio.

Rule 61. *Mei, tui, &c.*

Mei, tui, ſui, noſtri and *veſtri*, Genitive Caſes of the Primitives, uſed when Paſſion is ſignified; as—*Amor deſiderio tui*: *Tui* is the Genitive governed of the Subſtantive *deſiderio*.

Rule 62. *Meus, tuus, ſuus.*

When Poſſeſſion is ſignified, *meus, tuus, ſuus, noſter* and *veſter*, are uſed; as—*Amet deſiderio tuo*: *Tuo* is the Dative agrees with the Subſtantive *deſiderio*.

Rule 63. *Noſtrum & veſtrum Genitivi.*

Theſe Genitive Caſes *noſtrum* and *veſtrum*, be put after Diſtributives, Partitives, Comparatives and Superlatives; as—*Unuſquiſque veſtrum*, *nemo noſtrum*. *Veſtrum* is the Genitive Caſe governed the Noun Diſtributive *unuſquiſque*.

Rule 64. *Hæc poſſeſſiva meus, tuus.*

Theſe Poſſeſſives *meus, tuus, ſuus, noſter* and *veſter*, do take after them theſe Genitive Caſes, *ipſius, ſolius, unius, alterius, omnium, plurium, paucorum, uterque, uterque* and the Genitive Caſes of the Participles which are referred to the Genitive Caſe of the Primitive, underſtood in the Poſſeſſive; as—*Ego ipſius animo conjecturam fecerim*: *Ipſius* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Poſſeſſive *tuo*.

Ipſe ex Pronominibus.

The Pronoun *ipſe* repreſenteth the ſignification of the three Perſons only; as *ipſe vidi*, the firſt Perſon; *ipſe vidiſti*, the ſecond Perſon; *ipſe dixit*, the third Perſon.

Et nominibus.

The Pronoun *ipſe* is alſo joyned to Nouns and Pronouns; as—*Ipſe ego*, *ipſe Hercules*.

Idem, etiam omnibus.

The Compound *idem* may alſo be joyned to all the Perſons; as—*Ego idem*, *Idem has nuptias perge facere*; *idem jungat*

These Demonstratives, *hic*, *ille* and *iste*, thus distinguished—*hic*, he, sheweth or noteth him that is next unto me; *iste*, he, noteth him that is by thee; and *ille* sheweth him that is remote from us both. *Hæc demonstrativa.*

The Pronoun *ille*, is used when we shew eminence of any thing; as—*Alexander Magnus.* *Ille vir.*

But *iste* is used when we speak of any thing in contempt; as—*Istum æmulum quid poteris, ab ea pellito.* *Iste vir.*

Hic and *ille* when they have relation to Nouns going before, *hic* ought to be referred to the latter and nearer, *ille* to the former and more off. *Hic & ille.*

But sometime the Pronoun *hic* is referred to the Substantive farther off, and *ille* to the nearer.

Verborum Constructio.

Verbs Substantives, as *sum*, *forem*, *fio*, *existo*, and Verbs Passives of calling; *Nominor*, *dicor*, *appellor*, *nuncupor*, and the like; as *Scribor*, *salutor*, *habeor*, *existor*, and Verbs of Gesture, as *sedeo*, *dormio*, *cubo*, *ambulo*, *curro*, will have a Nominative Case before them, and a Nominative Case after them; as—*Deus est summum bonum*: *Deus* is the Nominative Case, comes before the Verb *est*, and *bonum* is the Nominative Case follows the Verb *est*. Rule 65. *Verba Substantiva.*

All Verbs will have a Nominative Case before them of the Noun Adjective which agrees with the Substantive in Case, Gender, and Number; as—*Rex mandavit primus impari heresim*——*Primus* is the Nominative Case follows the Verb *mandavit*, and agrees with the Substantive *Rex*. Rule 66. *Denique omnia fere.*

Verbs

Rule 67. *Infinitum quoq; utrinque Nom.*

Verbs of the Infinitive Mood will have such Cases after them as they have before them, especially Verbs of wishing, and such like; as—*Hypocrita cupit videri justus*, or, *Hypocrita cupit se videri justum*. *Justus* is the Nominative Case follows the Verb of the Infinitive Mood *videri*, and agrees with the Substantive *hypocrita*.

Rule 68. *Quamvis in his, &c.*

In these last Examples, the Accusative Case is understood before a Verb of the Infinitive Mood; as—*Nos esse dicere*. *Nos* is the Accusative Case comes before the Infinitive Mood *esse*.

Rule 69. *Sum Genitivum postulat.*

The Verb *sum* will govern a Genitive Case, when it signifies possession, or belonging to any thing; as—*Pecus est Melibæi*. *Melibæi* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *est*.

Rule 70. *Excipiuntur hi Nomina.*

These Nominative Cases, *meum, tuum, suum, nostrum, vestrum, humanum, bellum*, &c. are excepted; as—*Non est meum contra authoritatem senatus dicere*: *Meum* is the Nominative Case governed of the Verb *est*.

Rule 71. *At hic subintelligi.*

But the word *Officium*, Duty, seems to be understood, which sometimes is expressed, as in this Rule; *Tuum est officium, has bene ut adsimules nuptias*. *Officium* is the Nominative Case governed of the Verb *Est*.

Rule 72. *Verba æstimandi.*

Verbs of esteeming will govern a Genitive Case; as—*Plurimi passim fit pecus*. *Plurimi* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *fit*.

Rule 73. *Æstimo vel Gen. vel Abl.*

The Verb *æstimo* will govern a Genitive or an Ablative Case; as—*Non hoc te æstimo*: *Hujus* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *æstimo*.

Theſe Genitive Caſes *Flocci*, *nauci*, *ni-* Rule 74
, pili, *aſſis*, *hujus*, *teruncii*, are put *Flocci, nauci, nihili.*
r theſe Verbs, *æſtimo*, *pendo*, *facio*,
ſt properly; as *ego illum flocci pendo*; *flocci* is the
nitive Caſe governed of the Verb *pendo*.

Theſe are ſingular Phraſes; *æqui boni* Rule 75.
ſulo, *æqui boni facio*; *æqui* is the Ge- *Singularia*
ive Caſe governed of the Verb *conſulo*. *ſunt iſta.*

Verbs of accuſing, condemning, warn- Rule 76.
, or abſolving, will govern a Genitive *Verba accu-*
e of the Crime; as *Qui alterum incuſat* *ſandi.*
bri; *probri* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the
rb *incuſat*.

This Genitive Caſe is ſometimes turned Rule 77.
o an Ablative with a Prepoſition, or with- *Vertitur hæc*
t a Prepoſition; as *condemnabo eodem te* *Genitivus.*
mine; *crimine* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the
rb *condemnabo*.

Uterque, *nullus*, *neuter*, *&c.* and Rule 78.
ouns of the Superlative degree are not *Uterque nul-*
t to Verbs of accuſing, but in the Abla- *lus neuter.*
e Caſe; as *accuſas furti*, *an ſtupri*, *an utroque? utro-*
e is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *accuſas*.

Satago, *miſereor*, *miſereſco*, will go- Rule 79.
n a Genitive Caſe; as *is rerum ſuarum* *Satago, miſe-*
agit; *rerum* is the Genitive Caſe go- *reor.*
ned of the Verb *ſatagit*.

But *miſereor* and *miſereſco* are ſome- Rule 80.
mes (tho but ſeldom) read with a Dative *At miſereor,*
ſe; as *huic miſereor*, *huic ſuccurro*; *& miſereſco.*
ic is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *miſereor*.

Reminiſcor, *obliviſcor*, and *memini*, will Rule 81.
vern a Genitive or an Accuſative Caſe; *Reminiſcor,*
datæ fidei reminiſcitur; *fidei* is the *obliviſcor.*
nitive Caſe governed of the Verb *remi-*
ſcitur; and *omnia*, *quæ curant*, *ſenes meminerunt*;
nia is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *me-*
inerunt.

Rule 82. *Potior aut Genitivo aut Ablativo.* The Verb *potior* will govern a Genitive Case or an Ablative; as *Romani, ſignorum & armorum potiti ſunt*; *ſignorum* is the Genit. Case governed of the Verb *potiti ſunt*.

Rule 83. *Omnia Verba acquiſitive.* All Verbs that are put acquiſitively, that is to ſay, having the ſign *to* or *for* after them, will govern a Dative Case; as *iſtic mihi nec ſeritur nec metitur*; *mihi* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *ſeritur*.

Rule 84. *Imprimis Verba ſignificantia commodum.* Verbs that ſignifie profit or diſprofit will govern a Dative Case; as *illa leges demum votis reſpondet avari agricolæ*; *votis* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *reſpondet*.

Rule 85. *Ex his quædam efferuntur.* Some Verbs of profit or diſprofit will govern an Accuſative Case; as *unum ſtudetis omnes, unum ſentitis*; *unum* is the Accuſative Case governed of the Verb *ſtudetis*.

Rule 86. *Verba comparandi.* Verbs of comparing will govern a Dative Case; as *parvis componere magnis ſolebam*; *parvis* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *componere*.

Rule 87. *Interdum additur Ablativus.* Sometimes Verbs of comparing will govern an Ablative Case with a Prepoſition; as *comparo Virgilium cum Homero*; *Homero* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *comparo* and the Prepoſition *cum*.

Rule 88. *Aliquando Accuſativus.* Sometimes verbs of comparing will govern an Accuſative Case with a Prepoſition; as *ſi ad eum comparatur, nihil eſt*; *eum* is the Accuſative Case governed of the Prepoſition *ad* and the Verb *comparatur*.

Rule 89. *Verba dandi & reddendi.* Verbs of giving and reſtoring will govern a Dative Case; as *fortuna multis nimium dedit, nulli ſatis*; *multis* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *dedit*.

Theſe Verbs *dono*, *impertio*, and *aſper-*, &c. will govern divers Caſes; as *dono* *hoc munus*; and *dono te hoc munere*; *tibi* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *dono*, and *te* (in the ſecond Example) is governed of the Verb *dono*. Rule 90. *Hæc variam habent.*

Huic rei aliquid temporis impertias; *rei* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *impertias*. *Impertio.*

Aſperſit mihi labem, or *aſperſit me labe*; *mihi* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *aſperſit*, and *me* is the Acuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *aſperſit*. *Aſperſo.*

When *conſulo* is latin to give counſel, it will govern a Dative Caſe; as *piget infido conſuluiſſe viro*; that is, *dediſſe conſilium*; *viro* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *conſuluiſſe*. *Conſulo.*

But when *conſulo* is Latin for to ask council, it will govern an Accuſative Caſe; as *rectorem ratis de aſtris conſulit*; *rectorem* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *conſulit*.

Metuo, *timeo*, *formido*, when they ſignifie a careful fear, will govern a Dative Caſe, or an Ablative with a Prepoſition; as *metuo tibi*, *vel de te* (that is) *ſum ſolicitus pro te*; *tibi* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *metuo*; and *te* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *metuo*, *timeo*, or *formido*. *Metuo, &c.*

But *metuo*, *timeo*, and *formido*, when they ſignifie an hateful fear, will govern an Accuſative Caſe, or elſe an Ablative with the Prepoſition *à*; as *metuo*, *timeo*, *formido te*, *vel à te*, that is, *ne mihi noceas*; *te* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *metuo*, and *te* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Prepoſition *à* and the Verb *metuo*.

Verbs of promiſing or paying will govern a Dative Caſe; as *hæc tibi promitto*; *tibi* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *promitto*. Rule 91. *Verba promittendi.*

Rule 92. *Verba imperandi.* Verbs of commanding or ſhewing will govern a Dative Caſe; as *imperat aut ſervat collecta pecunia cuique*; *cuique* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *imperat.*

Dicimus Tempero. *Tempero*, and *refero*, *ſcribo*, and *mitto* will govern divers Caſes; as *tempero*, *moderor tibi & te*; *tibi* is the Dative, and *te* is the Accuſative governed of the Verb *tempero* or *moderor*; *refero tibi & ad te*; *tibi* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *refero*, and *te* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Prepoſition *ad*, and the Verb *refero.*

Rule 93. *Verba fidendi.* Verbs of truſting will govern a Dative Caſe; as *vacuis committere venis*; *venis* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *committere.*

Rule 94. *Verba obſequendi, &c.* Verbs of obeying or reſiſting will govern a Dative Caſe; as *ſemper obtemperat pius filius patri*; *patri* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *obtemperat.*

Rule 95. *At ex his quædam.* But ſome of theſe Verbs will govern other Caſes; as *ad amorem nihil potuit accedere*; *amorem* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *accedere*, and the Prepoſition *ad.*

Auſculto, when it is Latin for to obey, will govern a Dative Caſe; as *auſculto tibi*; *tibi* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *auſculto.*

But when *auſculto* is Latin for to hear, it will govern an Accuſative Caſe; as *auſculto te*; *te* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *auſculto.*

Rule 96. *Verba minandi.* Verbs of Threatning or being angry with, will govern a Dative Caſe; as *utrique mortem minatus eſt*; *utrique* is the Dative caſe governed of the Verb *minatus eſt.*

Rule 97. *Sum, cum compoſitis.* The Verb *ſum*, with its Compounds, except *poſſum*, will govern a Dative Caſe; as *rex pius eſt reipublicæ ornamento*; *reipublicæ* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *eſt.*

Verbs

Verbs that are compounded with any of these Prepositions, *præ, ad, con, ſub, ante, ſt, ob, in, inter,* or Verbs compounded with either of theſe Adverbs, *ſatis, bene, malè,* will govern a Dative Caſe; as *ego meis majoribus virtute præluxi*; *majoribus* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *præluxi.* Rule 98. *Dativum poſtulant verba compoſita.*

Some of theſe Verbs Compounds will govern another Caſe; as *præſtat ingenio alius ium*; *alium* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *præſtat.* Rule 99. *Panca ex his mutant Dat.*

When the Verb *eſt* is put for *habeo*, it will govern a Dative Caſe; as *velle ſuum ique eſt, nec voto vivitur uno*; *cuique* is e Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *eſt.* Rule 100. *Eſt pro habeo Dat.*

When the Verb *ſuppetit* is put for *habeo*, will govern a Dative Caſe; as *pauper e- non eſt, cui rerum ſuppetit uſus*; *cui* he Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *ſuppetit.* Rule 101. *Huic conſine eſt ſuppetit.*

The Verb *ſum*, with many others, will vern two Dative Caſes; as *exitio eſt avi- mare nautis*; *exitio* and *nautis* be the o Dative Caſes governed of the Verb *eſt.* Rule 102. *Sum cum multis aliis.*

There is a time when the Dative Caſes *ti- ſibi*, or *mihi*, are added for no neceſſity e, but rather for pleaſure; as *ego tibi hoc ctum dabo*; *tibi* is the Dative Caſe go- ned of the Verb *dabo.* Rule 103. *Eſt ubi hic Dativus tibi aut ſibi.*

Accuſativus poſt Verbum.

VErbs Tranſitives of what kind ſoever they be, whether they be Active, mmune, or Deponent, will have an cuſative Caſe after them; as *percon- rem fugito, nam garrulus idem eſt*; *percontatorem* he Accuſative Caſe follows the Verb *fugito.* Rule 104. *Verba tranſitiva.*

Rule 105. *Quinetiam verba quamlibet.*

Moreover, Verbs Intranſitives and Neuters, will govern an Accuſative Caſe; as *tertiam ætatem hominum vivebat Neſtor*; *ætatem* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *vivebat*.

Rule 106. *Hunc Accuſativum mutant Authores.*

Authors ſometimes change the Accuſative Caſe into an Ablative; as *diu videre vita vivere*; *vita* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *vivere*.

Rule 107. *Sunt quæ figuratè Acc. habent.*

Some Verbs do govern an Accuſative Caſe by a Figure; as *nec vox hominem ſonat*; *hominem* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *ſonat*.

Rule 108. *Verba rogandi, docendi, &c.*

Verbs of asking, teaching, and arraying, will govern two Accuſative Caſes, the one of the Perſon, and the other of the Thing; as *tu modo poſce Deum veniam*; *Deum* and *veniam* are the two Accuſative Caſes governed of the Verb *poſce*, *Deum* of the Perſon, and *veniam* of the Thing.

Rule 109. *Rogandi verba interdum mutant.*

Verbs of asking ſometimes change one of the Accuſative Caſes into an Ablative; as *veniam oremus ab ipſo*; *ipſo* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *oremus*, and the Preposition *ab*.

Rule 110. *Veſtiendi Verba interdum mutant, &c.*

Verbs of arraying ſometimes do change one of the Accuſative Caſes into an Ablative or Dative; as *induo te tunicâ vel tibi tunicam*; *tunicâ* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *induo*, and *tibi* is the Dative Caſe governed of the ſame Verb.

Ablativus poſt Verbum.

ALL Verbs will govern an Ablative Caſe of the Inſtrument, of the Cauſe, or of the Manner of doing; as *demona, non armis ſed morte ſubegit Jeſus*; *armis* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *ſubegit*.

Rule 111. *Quodvis Verbum admittit Ablativum, &c.*

Sometimes a Prepoſition is added to an Ablative Caſe ſignifying the Cauſe or the Manner of doing; as *baccharis præ ebrietate*; *ebrietate* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Prepoſition *præ*, and the Verb *baccharis*.

Rule 112. *Ablativo cauſæ & modi actionis.*

The word of Price is put after Verbs in the Ablative Caſe; as *teruncio, ſeu nitioſa nuce non emerim*; *nuce* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *emerim*.

Rule 113. *Quibuslibet Verbis ſubjicitur nomen pretii in Ablativo.*

Theſe Ablative Caſes, *vili, paulo, minimo, magno, nimio, plurimo*, are put after Verbs of Price, ſometimes without Subſtantives; as *redime te captum quam queas minimo*; *minimo* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *redime*.

Rule 114. *Vili, paulo, minimo, magno, nimio, plurimo.*

But theſe Genitive Caſes *tanti, quanti, pluris, minoris, tantidem, quantivis, quantilibet, quanticunque*, are put after Verbs of Price without Subſtantives; as *tanti eris aliis*; *tanti* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Verb *eris*.

Rule 115. *Excipiuntur hi Genitivi ſine Subſtantivis.*

The Verb *valeo* will ſometimes govern an Accuſative Caſe; as *denarii dicti, quod denos æris valebant*; *denos* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *valebant*.

Rule 116. *Valeo etiam interdum cum Accuſativo.*

Rule 117. *Verba abundandi, implendi, onerandi.*

Verbs of abounding, filling, emptying, loading, or unloading, will govern an Ablative Case; as *amore abundas Antipho*; *amore* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *abundas*.

Rule 118. *Ex quibus quædam nonnunquam in Genitivo.*

Sometimes Verbs of abounding will govern a Genitive Case; as *quam dives nivei pecoris? quam lactis abundas?* *lactis* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *abundas*.

Rule 119. *Fungor, fruor, utor, & similia.*

These Verbs *fungor*, *fruor*, *utor*, and such like, will govern an Ablative Case; as *justitiæ fungantur officiis*; *officiis* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *fungantur*.

Rule 120. *Prosequor te amore, laude, honore.*

The Verb *prosequor* will govern an Ablative Case; as *prosequor te amore*; *amore* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *prosequor*.

Rule 121. *Afficio te gaudio, supplicio, dolore.*

The Verb *afficio* will govern an Ablative Case; as *afficio te gaudio*; *gaudio* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *afficio*.

Rule 122. *Mereor cum Adverbiis benè, malè, melius, pejus, optimè, pessimè.*

The Verb *mereor*, with these Adverbs *benè*, *malè*, *melius*, *pejus*, *optimè*, *pessimè*, will govern an Ablative Case with a Preposition; as *de me nunquam benè meritus es*; *me* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *de* and the Verb *meritus es*.

Rule 123. *Quædam accipiendi, distandi, & auferendi.*

Verbs of receiving, or being distant, or taking away, will govern an Ablative Case with a Preposition; as *istuc ex multis jampridem audiveram*; *multis* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *ex*, and the Verb *audiveram*.

Sometimes

Sometimes the Ablative Caſe is turned into a Dative; as *vivere ſi recte neſcis, diſcede peritis*; *peritis* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *diſcede*.

Rule 124. *Vertitur hic Ablativus aliquando in Dativum.*

An Ablative Caſe ſignifying the meaſure of Exceſs, is put to Verbs which have the force of Compariſon; as *deforme exiſtimabat, quos dignitate præſtaret, ab iis virtutibus ſuperari; dignitate* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *præſtaret*.

Rule. 125. *Verbis quæ vim comparationis obtinent.*

An Ablative Caſe is put abſolute after many Verbs; as *imperante Auguſto natus eſt Chriſtus*; *Auguſto* is the Ablative Caſe put abſolute after the Verb *natus eſt*.

Rule 126. *Quibuslibet additur Ablativus abſolute ſumptus.*

Some Verbs will govern an Ablative Caſe by the Figure *Synechdoche*, and an Accuſative Caſe after the manner of Poets; as *ægrotat animo magis quam corpore*; *animo* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *ægrotat*: And *candet dentes*; *dentes* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *candet*.

Rule 127. *Verbis quibuſdam additur auferendi caſus per Synechdochen.*

But ſometimes they are uſed in the Genitive Caſe; as *abſurdè facis qui angas te animi*; *animi* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Verb *angas*.

Rule 128. *Quedam tamen efferuntur in gignendi caſu.*

Divers Caſes of a divers reaſon, may be put to the ſame Verb; as *dedit mihi veſtem pignori, te preſente, propria mea*; *veſtem* is the Accuſative Caſe follows the Verb *dedit*, by *Verba tranſitiva*; *mihi* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *dedit*, by *Verba dandi & reddendi*; *pignori* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *dedit*, by *Sum ſum multis aliis*; *te* is the Ablative

Rule 129. *Eidem Verbo diverſi caſus diverſæ rationis apponi poſſunt.*

Caſe

Case put absolute after the Verb *dedit*; and *manu* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *dedit*, by *Quodvis Verbum admittit Ablativum.*

Rule 130. *Passivis additur Ablativus agentis.*

A Verb Passive will govern an Ablative Case with a Preposition, and sometimes a Dative of the Doer; as ——— *laudatur ab his*; *his* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *laudatur*, and the Preposition *ab.*

Rule 131. *Quorum Participia frequentius Dativis gaudent.*

But Participles which are derived from Verbs Passives, will most commonly govern a Dative Case; as ——— *nulla tuarum, audita mihi, nec visa, sororum*; *mihi* is the Dative Case governed of the Participle *audita.*

Rule 132. *Cæteri Casus manent in Passivis, qui fuerunt activorum.*

Some Verbs Passives will govern such Cases as their Actives will govern; as ——— *accusaris à me furti*; *furti* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *accusaris.*

Rule 133. *Vapulo, veneo, liceo, exulo, fio, neutro-passiva.*

Vapulo, veneo, liceo, exulo, and *fio*, being Verbs Neuters Passives, will have the Passive Construction; that is, an Ablative Case with a Preposition; as —— *à præceptore vapulabis*; *præceptore* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *vapulabis*, and the Preposition *à.*

Rule 134. *Quibusdam tum Verbis tum Adjectivis.*

Verbs of the Infinitive Mood are usually put after Verbs, Adjectives, and Participles; as ——— *juvat usque morari*; *morari* is the Infinitive Mood, latter of two Verbs, *juvat* is the former.

Rule 135. *Ponuntur interdum figurate.*

Verbs of the Infinitive Mood are sometimes put absolutely and by a Figure; as — *Hæccine fieri flagitia: Fieri* is the Infinitive Mood put absolutely.

De Gerundiis.

GErunds, and Words like Gerunds and Supines, will govern ſuch Caſes as the Verbs will govern, from whence they are derived; as ——*Efferor ſtudio videndi parentes: Parentes* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Gerund in *di* —*videndi.*

Rule 136. *Gerundia ſive gerundivæ voces & Supina.*

Gerunds in *di* depend ſometimes upon Subſtantives, and ſometimes upon Adjectives; as———*Et quæ tanta fuit Romam tibi cauſa videndi: Videndi* is the Gerund in *di*, governed of the Subſtantive *cauſa.*

Rule 137. *Gerundia in di.*

An Infinitive Mood, after the manner of Poets, is put inſtead of a Gerund; as———*Studium quibus arva tueri: Tueri* is the Infinitive Mood put inſtead of a Gerund, and governed of the Subſtantive *ſtudium.*

Rule 138. *Poetice infinitivus modus.*

Sometimes the Genitive Caſe Plural is elegantly governed of a Gerund; as—— *Quum illorum videndi gratiâ, me in forum contuliſſem: Illorum* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Gerund *videndi.*

Rule 139. *Interdum non invenuſte.*

Gerunds in *do* depend on ſome of theſe Prepoſitions, *a, ab, abs, de, e, ex, cum, in, pro*; as ——*Ignavi à diſcendo, cito deterrentur: Diſcendo* is the Gerund in *do*, governed of the Prepoſition *a.*

Rule 140. *Gerundia in do pendent ab his Præp.*

Some

Rule 141. *Ponuntur & abſque Præpoſitione.* Sometimes Gerunds in *do* are put without a Prepoſition; as—*Alitur vitium, creſcitque tegendo: Tegendo* is a Gerund in *do*, put without a Prepoſition.

Rule 142. *Gerundia in dum pendent.* Gerunds in *dum* depend upon one of theſe Prepoſitions, *inter*, *ante*, *ad*, *ob*, *propter*; as——*Inter cœnandum, hilares eſte: Cœnandum* is the Gerund in *dum*, governed of the Prepoſition *inter*.

Rule 143. *Cum ſignificatur neceſſitas.* When neceſſity is ſignified, the Gerund in *dum* is put abſolutely without a Prepoſition; as—*Orandum eſt, ut ſit mens ſana in corpore ſano: Orandum* is the Gerund in *dum*, put without a Prepoſition.

Rule 144. *Vertuntur Gerundii voces in Nom. Adj.* Gerunds are ſometimes turned into Nouns Adjectives; as—*Tantus amor florum, & generandi gloria mellis: Generandi* is the Gerund turned into a Noun Adjective, and agrees with the Subſtantive *mellis*.

De Supinis.

Rule 145. *Primus Supinum active ſignificat.* THE firſt Supine ſignifies actively, that is, betokens to do, and is ſet after Verbs and Participles, that betoken moving to a place; as—*Spectatum veniunt: Spectatum* is the firſt Supine governed of the Verb *veniunt*.

Rule 146. *At hoc Supinum.* But this Supine in Verbs Neuters Paſſives, and with the Infinitive Mood *iri*, hath the Paſſive ſignification; as—*Coctum ego, non vapulatum, dudum conductus ſum: Vapulatum* is the firſt Supine from the Neuter Paſſive *vapulo*, governed of the Verb *conductus ſum*.

The

The firſt Supine is ſometimes put abſolute with the Verb *eſt*; as — *Actum eſt, illicet, periiſti: Actum* is the firſt Supine, put abſolute with the Verb *eſt*.

Rule 147. *Ponitur & abſolute cum verbo eſt.*

The latter Supine hath the Paſſive ſignification, and is put after Nouns Adjectives; as — *Non eſt facile purgatu: Purgatu* is the latter Supine governed of the Adjective *facile*.

Rule 148. *Poſterius Supinum paſſive.*

De Tempore.

NOuns that ſignifie part of time be commonly put in the Ablative Caſe, ſeldom in the Accuſative; as — *Nemo mortalium, omnibus horis ſapit: Horis* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *ſapit*.

Rule 149. *Quæ ſignificant partem temporis.*

But Nouns that ſignifie continuance of time, be commonly put in the Accuſative Caſe, ſeldom in the Ablative; as — *Hic tum ter centum totos regnabitur annos: Annos* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *regnabitur*.

Rule 150. *Quæ autem durationem,* &c.

Spatium Loci.

THe ſpace of a place is put after Verbs in the Accuſative Caſe, and ſometimes in the Ablative; as — *Dic quibus in terris* — *Tres pateat cœli ſpatium, non amplius, ulnas: Ulnas* is the Accuſative governed of the Verb *pateat*.

Rule 151. *Spatium loci in Accuſativo.*

Appella-

Appellativa Locorum:

Rule 152. *Nomina Appellativa &c*

THe common names of places are uſed with a Prepoſition; and names of great places are ſometimes uſed with a Prepoſition to Verbs, ſignifying the motion or action in a place, to a place, from a place, or by a place; as—*In foro verſatur; meruit ſub rege in Gallia: Foro* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Prepoſition *in*, and the Verb *meruit*.

Rule 153. *Omne verbum admittit Gen.*

Every Verb will govern a Genitive Caſe of the proper name of a place, where an action is done; ſo that the proper name be of the firſt or ſecond Declenſion and the Singular Number; as—*Quid Romæ faciam? Romæ* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Verb *faciam*.

Rule 154. *Hi Genitivi humi, domi, &c.*

Theſe Genitive Caſes, *humi*, *domi*, *militiæ*, *belli*, follow the form of proper names in conſtruction; as—*Domi bellique ſimul viximus: Domi* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Verb *viximus*.

Rule 155. *Domi, non alios ſecum patitur Genitivos.*

The word *domi*, will have no other Genitive Caſes to agree with it, except *meæ*, *tuæ*, *ſuæ*, *noſtræ*, *veſtræ*, *alienæ*; as—*Veſcor domi meæ non alienæ: Meæ* is the Genitive Caſe agrees with the Subſtantive *domi*.

Rule 156. *Verum ſi proprium nomen loci.*

But if the proper name of the place be of the third Declenſion or the Plural Number, then it ſhall be put in the Dative or in the Ablative Caſe; as—*Colchus an Aſſyrius Thæbis nutritus: Thæbis* is the Dative or the Ablative Caſe governed of the Participle *nutritus*.

Rule 157. *Sic utimur rure vel rure.*

So we uſe *ruri* or *rure* in the Dative or in the Ablative Caſe; as—*Ruri fere ſe continet: Ruri* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb *continet*.

Th

The proper name of a place is put to Verbs ſignifying a motion to a place in the Accuſative Caſe; as—*Conceſſi Cantabrigiam: Cantabrigiam* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *conceſſi*.

Rule 158. *Verbis ſignificantibus motum ad locum.*

After this manner we uſe *rus* and *domus*; as—*Ego rus ibo: Rus* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Verb *ibo*.

Rule 159. *Ad hunc modum utimur rus & domus.*

The proper name of a place is put to Verbs ſignifying a motion from a place, or by a place, in the Ablative Caſe; as—*Niſi ante Româ profectus eſſes: Româ* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *profectus eſſes*.

Rule 160. *Verbis ſignificantibus motum à loco aut per locum.*

After the ſame manner we uſe *domus* and *rus*; as—*Nuper exiit domo: Domo* is the Ablative Caſe governed of the Verb *exiit*.

Rule 161. *Ad eundem modum uſurpantur domus & rus.*

Perſonalium Conſtructio.

THeſe three Impersonals, *intereſt*, *refert*, and *eſt* for *intereſt*, will govern a Genitive Caſe of all caſual words, (except *meâ*, *tuâ*, *ſuâ*, *noſtrâ* and *veſtrâ*, the Ablative Caſes of the Pronouns Poſſeſſives) as—*Intereſt magiſtratus tuerî bonos: Magiſtratus* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Verb Impersonal *intereſt*.

Rule 162. *Hæc tria impersonalia intereſt, refert & eſt.*

Theſe Genitive Caſes, *tanti*, *quanti*, *magni*, *parvi*, &c. are added to theſe Impersonals, *intereſt*, *refert* and *eſt*; as—*Magnî refert quibuſcum vixeris: Magnî* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Verb Impersonal *refert*.

Rule 163. *Adjiciuntur & illi Genitivi.*

Theſe

Rule 164. *In dativum feruntur hæc impersonalia.*

Theſe Impersonals, *accidit, certum eſt, contingit, conſtat, confert,* &c. will govern a Dative Caſe; as——*convenit mihi tecum: Mihi* is the Dative Caſe governed of the Verb Impersonal *convenit.*

Rule 165. *Hæc impersonalia accuſandi c ſum exigunt.*

Theſe Impersonals, *juvat, decet,* with their Compounds, *delectat, oportet,* will govern an Accuſative Caſe; as—*Me juvat ire per altum: Me* is the Accuſative Caſe, governed of the Verb Impersonal *juvat.*

Rule 166. *His vero attinet, pertinet, ſpectat.*

Theſe Impersonals, *attinet, pertinet, ſpectat,* will govern an Accuſative Caſe with the Preposition *ad*; as—*Mene vis dicere? quod ad te attinet: Te* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Preposition *ad,* and the Verb Impersonal *attinet.*

Rule 167. *His impersonalibus ſubjicitur Accuſativus cum Gen.*

Theſe Impersonals, *pœnitet, tædet, miſeret, miſereſcit, pudet* and *piget,* will govern an Accuſative Caſe with a Genitive; as—*Si ad centeſimum vixiſſet annum; ſenectutis eum ſuæ non pœniteret: Eum* is the Accuſative and *ſenectutis* is the Genitive Caſe governed of the Verb Impersonal *pœniteret.*

Rule 168. *Nonnulla impersonalia rimig.*

Some Verbs Impersonals are turned into Verbs Perſonals; as—*Non omnes arbuſta juvant: Juvant* is turned into a Verb Perſonal, and agrees with the Nominative Caſe *arbuſta.*

Rule 169. *Cœpit, incipit, deſinit, debet, ſolet, & poteſt.*

Theſe Verbs *cœpit, incipit, deſinit, debet, ſolet* and *poteſt,* being joyned to Verbs Impersonals, are put impersonally, that is, without a Nominative Caſe; as—*Ubi primum cœperat non convenire: Cœperat* being joyned to the Impersonal *convenire,* is put impersonally.

A Verb Impersonal of the Passive Voice, will govern an Ablative Case with a Preposition; as —*Ab hostibus constanter pugnatur: Hostibus* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *ab*, and the Verb Impersonal *pugnatur*.

Rule 170. *Verbum impersonale passivæ vocis.*

Sometimes the Case which is governed of the Verb Impersonal, is not expressed but understood; as—*Strato discumbitur ostro*: The Preposition *ab*, and the Ablative Case *illis*, being understood.

Rule 171. *Qui quidem casus interdum non exprimitur.*

A Verb Impersonal of the Passive Voice may be put for each Persons of both Numbers, by the force of an Ablative Case with a Preposition joyned to it; as—*Statur à me*, is put for the first Person Singular *sto*; and *statur ab illis* is put for the third Person Plural *stant*.

Rule 172. *Verbum impersonale passivæ vocis.*

Participii Construction.

PArticiples will govern such Cases as the Verbs will govern from whence they are derived; as—*Duplices tendens ad sidera palmas*: *Palmas* is the Accusative Case governed of the Participle *tendens*.

Rule 173. *Participia regunt casus verborum.*

But Participles in *dus* do most commonly govern a Dative Case; as—*Restat Chremes, qui mihi exorandus est*: *Mihi* is the Dative Case governed of the Participle in *dus*, *exorandus*.

Rule 174. *Quamvis in his usitatior est Dat.*

Participles when they be changed into Nouns, do govern a Genitive Case; as—*Alieni appetens, sui profusus*: *Alieni* is the Genitive Case governed of the Noun Adjective *appetens*.

Rule 175. *Participiorum voces cum fiunt nomina.*

These

Rule 176. *Exoſus, peroſus, pertæſus.*

Theſe Participial Voices, *exoſus*, *peroſus*, *pertæſus*, will govern an Accuſative Caſe, when they have the Active ſignification; as, *immundam ſegnitiem peroſæ*; *ſegnitiem* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Participle, or rather Adjective *peroſæ*.

Rule 177. *Exoſus & peroſus.*

Exoſus and *peroſus* will govern a Dative Caſe, when they have the Paſſive ſignification; as, *Germani Romanis peroſi ſunt*; *Romanis* is the Dative Caſe, governed of the Participle *peroſi*.

Rule 178. *Natus, prognatus, ſatus, &c.*

Theſe Participles *natus*, *prognatus*, *ſatus*, *cretus*, *creatus*, *ortus*, *editus*, will govern an Ablative Caſe; as, *bona bonis prognata parentibus*; *parentibus* is the Ablative Caſe, governed of the Participle *prognata*.

Adverbii Conſtructio.

Rule 179. *En & ecce demonſtrandi adverbia.*

EN, and *ecce*, Adverbs of ſhewing will govern a Nominative Caſe; as, *en Priamus*; *Priamus* is the Nominative Caſe, governed of the Adverb, *en*.

Rule 180. *En & ecce exprobrantia*

En and *ecce*, when they are Adverbs of upbraiding will govern an Accuſative Caſe only; as, *en animum & mentem*; *animum* is the Accuſative Caſe, governed of the Adverb, *en*.

Rule 181. *Quædam adverbia loci, temporis & quantitatis.*

Adverbs of place, time, and quantity will govern a Genitive Caſe.

Loci; Adverbs of place will govern a Genitive Caſe; as, *ubi gentium? quo terrarum abiit? gentium* is the Genitive Caſe, governed of the Adverb, *ubi*.

Adverbs

Adverbs of time will govern a Genitive Caſe; as, *nihil, tunc temporis amplius quam flere poterum*; *temporis* is the Genitive Caſe, governed of the Adverb, *tunc*.

Rule 182. *Temporis, ut nunc, tunc, tum.*

Adverbs of quantity will govern a Genitive Caſe; as, *ſatis eloquentiæ, ſapientiæ parum*; *eloquentiæ* is the Genitive Caſe, governed of the Adverb *ſatis*.

Rule 183. *Quantitatis, ut parum.*

The Adverb *inſtar*, when it ſignifies equality, or matching, meaſure, or likeneſs, will govern a Genitive Caſe; as, *inſtar montis equum, divinâ Palladis arte, ædificant, montis* is the Genitive Caſe, governed of the Adverb *inſtar*.

Rule 184. *Inſtar æquiparationem, menſuram,* &c.

Sometimes the Prepoſition *ad*, is added to the Adverb *inſtar*, and governs a Genitive Caſe; as, *vallis adinſtar caſtrorum clauditur*; *caſtrorum* is the Genitive Caſe, governed of the Prepoſition *ad*, with the Adverb *inſtar*.

Rule 185. *Hic apponitur interdum prep. ad.*

Some Adverbs will govern a Dative Caſe, of the Nouns from whence they are derived; as, *venit obviam illi*; *illi* is the Dative Caſe, governed of the Adverb *obviam*.

Rule 186. *Quædam dativum admittunt nominum.*

Theſe Dative Caſes, *tempori, luci, veſperi*, be uſed adverbially; as, *tempori veni, quod omnium rerum eſt primum*; *tempori* is the Dative Caſe, put adverbially after the Verb *venit*.

Rule 187. *Sunt & hi dativi adverbiales.*

Some Adverbs do govern an Accuſative Caſe, of the Prepoſitions from whence they are derived; as, *Caſtra propiùs urbem moventur*; *urbem* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Adverb *propiùs*.

Rule 188. *Sunt quæ accuſandi caſum admittunt.*

The

Rule 189. *Cedo, flagitantis.*

The Adverb *cedô*, of one earneſtly deſiring, will govern an Accuſative Caſe; as, *cedo quemvis arbitrum*; *arbitrum* is the Accuſative Caſe governed of the Adverb *cedo*.

Rule 190. *Adverbia diverſitatis, aliter, ſecus, &c.*

Adverbs of diverſity, as *aliter*, *ſecus*, and theſe two, *ante*, *poſt*, will govern an Ablative Caſe; as, *multo aliter*, *paulo ſecus*; *multo* is the Ablative Caſe, governed of the Adverb *aliter*.

Rule 191. *Adverbia comparativi & ſup. gradus.*

Adverbs of the Comparative and Superlative degree, will govern ſuch Caſes, as Nouns of the Comparative and the Superlative degree will govern; as, *acceſſit propiùs illo*, *optime omnium dixit*; *illo* is the Ablative Caſe, governed of the Adjective of the Comparative degree *propiùs*.

Rule 192. *Plus, Nom. Gen. Acc. & Ablativo.*

The Adverb *plus* will govern a Nominative, a Genitive, an Accuſative, and an Ablative Caſe; as, *paulo plus trecenta vehicula ſunt amiſſa*; *vehicula* is the Nominative Caſe, governed of the Adverb *plus*.

Conjunctionum Conſtructio.

Rule 193. *Conjunctiones copulativæ & disjunctivæ.*

Conjunctions Copulatives and Disjunctives, with theſe four, *quam*, *niſi*, *præterquam*, *an*, couple like Caſes together; as, *Socrates docuit Xenophontem & Platonem*; *&* is a Conjunction couples like Caſes between *Xenophontem* and *Platonem*.

Some-

Sometimes Conjunctions do couple divers Cases, because the Verb in the same sentence will govern divers Cases; as, *emi librum centussi & pluris*; & couples divers Cases between *centussi* and *pluris*; because the Verb *emi* will govern divers Cases. Rule 194. *Excepto, si casualis dictionis.*

Conjunctions Copulatives and Disjunctives couple like Moods and Tenses together; as, *recto stat corpore dispicitque terras*; *que* is a Conjunction couples like Moods and Tenses, between the Verbs *stat* and *dispicit*. Rule 195. *Conjunctiones copulativæ*, &c.

Sometimes Conjunctions do couple divers Tenses, though like Moods; as, *nisi me lactasses amantem, & vana spe produceres*; & is a Conjunction couples like Moods, but divers Tenses between the Verbs *lactasses* and *produceres*. Rule 196. *Aliquoties autem*, &c.

Præpositionum Constructio.

THE Preposition, *in*, when it is understood, sometimes governs an Ablative Case; as, *habeo te loco parentis*; *loco* is the Ablative Case, governed of the Preposition *in*, which is understood. Rule 197. *Præpositio subaudita.*

A Preposition in composition sometimes governs the same Case, that it doth without composition; as, *nec posse Italiâ Teucrorum avertere regem*; *Italiâ* is the Ablative Case, governed of the Verb *avertere*. Rule 198. *Præpositio in compositione.*

Verbs compounded with any of these Prepositions, *a, ab, ad, con, de, e, ex, in*, sometimes repeat the same Prepositions with their Case; as, *abstinuerunt à viris*; Rule 199. *Verba Composita cum a, ab, ad, con*, &c.

viris

viris is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *abstinuerunt*, and the Preposition *a*.

Rule 200. *In, pro erga, contra & ad.*

When the Preposition *in*, is set for *erga*, *contra*, or *ad*, it will govern an Accusative Case; as, *accipit in Teucros, animum mentemque benignum*; *Teucros* is the Accusative Case, governed of the Preposition *in*, which is put for *erga*.

Rule 201. *In, cum significatur actus in loco.*

The Preposition *in*, when it signifies an action in a place, will govern an Ablative Case; as, *spectatur in ignibus aurum*; *ignibus* is the Ablative Case, governed of the Preposition *in*.

Rule 202. *Præpositiones cum casum amittunt.*

Prepositions when they be set without their Cases are turned into Adverbs; as, *longo post tempore venit*; *post* is a Preposition, but turned into an Adverb, because 'tis put without its Case.

Interjectionum Constructio.

Rule 203. *Interjectiones non raro absolute, &c.*

INterjections are oftentimes put absolutely, and without a Case; as, *spem gregis* (*ah!*) *silice in nuda connixa reliquit*; *ah*, is an Interjection put without a Case.

Rule 204. *O, exclamantis nom. acc. & vocativo.*

The Interjection, *ô*, of exclamation will govern a Nominative, an Accusative, and a Vocative Case; as, *ô festus dies hominum! dies* is the Nominative Case, governed of the Interjection, *ô*.

O, cum accusativo.

O fortunatos nimium, bona si sua norint agricolas; *agricolas* is the Accusative governed of the Interjection, *ô*.

O, cum Vocativo.

O formose puer, nimium ne crede colori; *puer* is the Vocative Case, governed of the Interjection, *ô*.

The

Rule 205. *Heu & proh, nunc nom, nunc acc.*

The Interjections, *heu*, and *proh*, will ſometimes govern a Nominative, and ſometimes an Accuſative Caſe; as, *heu pietas! heu priſca fides! pietas* is the Nominative Caſe, governed of the Interjection, *heu*; and *heu ſtirpem inviſam! ſtirpem* is the Accuſative Caſe, governed of the Interjection, *heu*.

Rule 206. *Hei & væ dativo apponuntur.*

The Interjections, *hei*, and *væ*, will govern a Dative Caſe; as, *hei mihi, quod nullis amor eſt medicabilis herbis*; *mihi* is the Dative Caſe, governed of the Interjection, *hei*.

Væ miſero mihi; *mihi* is the Dative Caſe, governed of the Interjection, *væ*.

Laus ſoli Deo.

DICTIO-

DICTIONARIOLUM:

OR A

Short Dictionary;

Declaring what Part of Speech any word is of, which belongs to the examples of the ſeveral Rules in Syntaxis, *with the manner of declining them.*

Rule.

140 A Prepoſition governs an Ablat. Caſe.

130 *ab*, Prep. governs an Ablat. Caſe.

11 *abiere*, V. N. Com. 4 Con. *abeo, is, ivi, ire, eundi, do, dum; itum, tu, rus.*

199 *abſtinuerunt*, V. Ac. Com. 2 Con. *abſtineo, es, ui, ere; di, do, dum; tentum, u; rus.*

117, 118 *abundas*, V. Ac. Com. 1 Con. *abundo, as, avi, are; di, do, dum; tum, u; ans, rus.*

95 *accedere*, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. *accedo, dis, ceſſi, ere; di, do, dum; ſum, u; rus.*

147 *actum*, firſt Supine, derived from the Verb, *ago, gis, egi*, &c.

185 *ad*, Prep governs an Accuſ. Caſe.

127 *ægrotat*, V. N. 1 Con. *ægroto, tas, avi, are; andi, do, dum*; Sup. *caret, ans.*

75 *æqui*

Rule.

75 *æqui*, N. S. 2 Decl. *hoc æquum*, Gen. *æqui.*

73 *æstimo*, V. Act. 1 Con. *æstimo, mas, avi, are; andi, do, dum; atum, u; ans, turus.*

105 *ætatem*, N. S. 3 Decl. *hæc ætas*, Gen. *ætatis.*

121 *afficio*, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. *afficio, ficis, feci, ere; iendi, do, dum; ctum, u; rus.*

203 *ah*, Interjection.

36, 55 *alter*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *alter, altera, alterum*, Gen. *alterius*, Voc. *caret.*

99 *alium*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *alius, a, um*, Gen. *alius*, Voc. *caret.*

175 *alieni*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *alienus, na, num*, Gen. *alieni, næ, ni.*

190 *aliter*, Adverb of diversity.

13 *amissus*, Part. Pret. *amissus, sa, sum*, Gen. *si, sæ, si*; from the Verb *amitto, tis.*

22 *amor*, N. S. 3. Decl. *hic amor*, Gen. *moris.*

95 *amorem*, idem.

117, 120 *amore*, idem.

18 *animantium*, N. Ad. 3 Art. *hic hæc & hoc animans*, Gen. *hujus animantis.*

128 *angas*, V. Ac. 3 Con. *ango, gis, xi, ere; gendi, do, dum*; Sup. *caret, gens.*

128 *animi*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic animus*, Gen. *hujus animi.*

127 *animo*, idem.

80 *animum*, idem.

150 *annos*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic annus*, Gen. *hujus anni.*

175 *appetens*, N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. *hic hæc & hoc appetens*, Gen. *hujus appetentis.*

89 *arbitrum*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic arbiter*, Gen. *hujus arbitri.*

68 *arbusta*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc arbustum*, G. *hujus arbusti.*

11 *armis*, N. S. 2 Decl. Sing. *caret.* Plur. Nom. *hæc arma*, Gen. *horum armorum.*

Rule.

166 *attinet*, V. Imp. 2 Con. *attinet, nebat, nuit, nuerat, nebit, nere.*

11 *avis*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *avis*, Gen. *avis.*

14 *audito*, Part. Pret. Nom. *auditus, ta, tum*, Gen. *auditi, tæ, ti*, from the Verb *audior.*

32 *audax*, N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. *hic hæc & hoc audax*, Gen. *hujus audacis.*

31 *avida*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *avidus, da, dum*, Gen. *avidi, dæ, di.*

123 *audiveram*, V. Ac. 4 Con. *audio, dis, ivi, ire ; di, do, dum ; tum, u ; ens, rus.*

131 *audita*, Part. Pret. *auditus, a, tum*, &c.

126 *Auguſto*, N. S. prop. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic Auguſtus*, Gen. *Auguſti*, Plur. *caret.*

43 *auro*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc aurum*, Gen. *hujus auri*, Plur. *caret.*

29 *authoritate*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hæc authoritas*, Gen. *hujus tatis.*

198 *avertere*, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. *averto, tis, ti, tere ; tendi, do, dum ; ſum, u ; tens, ſurus.*

132 *accuſaris*, V. Paſſ. 1 Con. *accuſor, ſaris, vel are ſatus ſum vel fui, ſari, tus, ndus.*

78 *accuſas*, V. Ac. Com. 1 Con. *accuſo, ſas, ſavi, are ; ſandi, do, dum ; tum, u ; ans, rus.*

B

112 *Baccharis*, V. Dep. 1 Con. *bacchar, charis, vi chare ; chandi, do, dum ; tum, u ; chan chaturus.*

46 *bonus*, N. Ad. 3. Term. Nom. *bonus, na, num* Gen. *ni, næ, ni.*

65 *bonum*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc bonum*, G. *hu boni.*

C

Rule.

142 COEnandum, Gerund in *dum*, from the Verb *æno, nas, navi, & natus ſum.*

169 *cœperat*, V. Ac. 3 Con. *cœpio, pis, pi, ere; piendi, do, dum; ptum, u; iens, rus.*

6 *ceciderunt*, V. Ac. 3 Con. *cado, dis, cecidi, cadere; dendi, do, dum; ſum, u; dens, rus.*

189 *cedo*, Adverb.

194 *centuſſis*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic centuſſis*, Gen. *hujus centuſſis*, Abl. *centuſſi.*

75 *conſulo*, V. N. 3 Con. *conſulo, lis, lui, ere; lendi, do, dum; tum, u; lens, turus.*

78 *condemnabo*, V. Act. Com. 1 Con. *condemno, nas, navi, nare; andi, do, dum; tum, u; ans.*

146 *conductus ſum*, V. Paſſ. 3 Con. *conducor, ceris vel cere, ductus ſum vel fui, duci, ductus, ducendus.*

157 *continet*, V. Ac. Com. 2 Con. *contineo, nes, nui, nere; di, do, dum; tentum, tu; turus.*

158 *conceſſi*, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. *concedo, dis, ceſſi, dere; dendi, do, dum; ſum, u; ens, rus.*

164 *convenit*, V. Imp. 4 Con. *convenit, conveniebat, convenit, convenerat, conveniet, conveniri.*

169 *conveniri*, idem.

137 *cauſa*, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc cauſa*, Gen. *hujus cauſæ.*

158 *Cantabrigiam*, N. S. prop. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc Cantabrigia*, Gen. *æ*, Plur. *caret.*

185 *caſtrorum*, N. S. 2 Decl. Sing. *caret*, Plur. Nom. *hæc caſtra*, Gen. *horum caſtrorum.*

48 *commune*, N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. *hic & hæc communis & hoc une*, Gen. *communis.*

86 *componere*, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. *compono, nis, ſui, ere; endi, do, dum; ſitum, u; nens, rus.*

Rule.

87 *comparo*, V. Ac. Com. 1 Con. *comparo, ras, ravi, rare; di, do, dum; atum, u; rans, trirus.*

88 *comparatur*, V. Paſſ. 1 Con. *comparor, raris vel rare; ratus ſum vel fui, rari, tus, dus.*

93 *committere*, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. *committo, tis, miſi, tere; tendi, ſum, u; tens, turus.*

38 *cujum*, N. Ad. Interrog. Nom. *cujus, ja, jum.*

40 *cujus*, Pron. Relat. Nom. *qui, quæ, quod*, G. *cujus.*

102 *cuj.* idem.

92 *cuique*, Pron. Com. Nom. *quique, quæque, quodque*, G. *cujuſque.*

77 *crimine*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hoc crimen*, G. *hujus criminis.*

D

2 *Damnaſtis*, V. Ac. 1 Con. *damno, nas, navi, nare; nandi, do, dum; natum, tu; nans, damnaturus.*

103 *Dabo*, V. Ac. 1 Con. *do, das, dedi, dare; dandi, do, dum; datum, u; dans, daturus.*

61, 62 *deſiderio*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc deſiderium*, G. *hujus deſiderii.*

89 *dedit*, the ſame with *dabo*, *Rule* 103.

108 *deum*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic deus*, G. *hujus dei*, Voc. *ô Deus.*

116 *denos*, N. Ad. 3 Ter. Sing. *caret.* Plur. Nom. *deni, æ, a*, G. *denorum*, &c.

27 *Dianæ*, N. S. prop. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc Diana*, G. Plur. *caret.*

41 *digitorum*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic digitus*, Gen. *hujus digiti.*

37 *divitiarum*, N. S. 1 Decl. Sing. *caret*, Plur. *hæ divitiæ*, Gen. *harum divitiarum.*

56 *diverſum*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *diverſus, ſa, ſum*, Gen. *diverſi, ſæ, ſi.*

59 *dignus*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *dignus, na, num*, G. *digni, næ, ni.*

60 dig

Rule.

60 *digna*, idem, *dignus, nior, nissimus.*

124 *discede*, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. *discedo, dis, cessi, dere; dendi; sum, u; dens, surus.*

125 *dignitate*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hæc dignitas*, Gen. *hujus tatis.*

140 *discedendo*, Gerund in *do*; from the Verb *discedo, dis, cessi.*

171 *discumbitur*, V. Imper. Pass. 3 Conjugat. *discumbitur, bebatur, cubitum est vel fuit, cubitum erat vel fuerat, cumbetur, cumberi.*

195 *Dispicit*, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. *dispicio, is, exi, ere; endi, do, dum; spectum, u; ens, rus.*

204 *dies*, N. S. 5 Decl. Nom. *hic vel hæc dies*, Gen. *hujus diei*, Plur. *hi dies.*

23 *domus*, N. S. 2 and 4 Decl. Nom. *hæc domus*, Gen. *domi & domus.*

54, 155 *domi*, idem.

61 *domo*, idem.

142 *doctissimus*, N. Ad. 3 Ter. *doctissimus, ma, mum*, Gen. *doctissimi mæ, mi.*

144 *doctior*, N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. *hic & hæc doctior & hoc doctius*, G. *doctioris.*

190 *dono*, V. Ac. 1 Con. *dono, as, avi, are; nandi, do, dum; tum, u; dans, daturus.*

E

E*Brietate*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hæc ebrietas*, G. *hujus ebrietatis*, Plur. *caret.*

Eloquentiæ, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc eloquentia*, G. *eloquentiæ*, Plur. *caret.*

emerim, V. Ac. 3 Con. *emo, mis, mi, mere; emti, do, dum; emptum, u; ens, turus.*

emollit, V. Ac. Com. 4 Con. *emollio, lis, ivi, ire; liendi; litum, u; ens, turus.*

180 *en*, Adverb of Shewing and Upbraiding.

Rule.

115 *eris*, V. Neut. Irreg. *Sum, es, fui, esse, futurus.*
88 *esse*, idem.
14, 9, &c. *est*, idem.
193, 196 *et*, Conjunction Cop.
161 *exiit*, V. N. Com. 4 Con. *exeo, is, ivi, itum*; *eundi, do, dum*; *tum, u*; *uns, turus.*
103 *exitio*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc exitium*, G. *hujus exitii.*
174 *exorandus*, Part. Fut. in *dus*. Nom. *exorandus, da, dum*, Gen. *di, dæ, di.*
88, 167 *eum*, Pron. Prim. Nom. *is, ea, id*, Gen. *ejus*, Voc. *caret.*

F

148 *Facile*, N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. *hic & hæc facilis & hoc le*, Gen. *hujus facilis.*
153 *faciam*, V. Ac. 3 Con. *facio, cis, feci, facere*; *ciendi, do, dum*; *factum, u*; *ens, urus.*
54 *fœcundissimus*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *fœcundissimus, ma, mum*, Gen. *mi, mæ, mi.*
3 *fertur*, V. Pass. Irreg. *feror, ferris vel ferre, latus sum vel fui, ri, latus, ferendus.*
28 *fide*, No. S. 5 Decl. Nom. *hæc fides*; Gen. *hujus fidei*, Plur. *caret.*
81 *fidei*, idem.
72 *fit*, V. N. Pass. *fio, fis, factus sum vel fui*; *fieri, factus, faciendus.*
135 *fieri*, idem.
74 *flocci*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic floccus*, Gen. *hujus flocci.*
41 *fortior*, N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. *hic & hæc fortior & hoc tius*, Gen. *fortioris.*
152 *foro*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc forum*, Gen. *fori*, Plur. Nom. *fora*, Ac. *fora*, V. *fora.*
39, 132 *furti*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc furtum*, Gen. *hujus furti.*

Rule.

119 *fungantur*, V. Dep. 3 Con *fungor, geris, vel ere, functus ſum vel fui, fungi; gendi, do, dum; functum, u; gens, turus.*

104 *fugio*, V. Ac. 3 Con. *fugio, gis, gi, gere; gendi; gitum, tu; gens, giturus.*

G

121 *Gaudio*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc gaudium*, G. *hujus gaudii.*

144 *generandi*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *generandus, da, dum*; G. *generandi, dæ, di.*

49 *gloriam*, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc gloria*, G. *hujus gloriæ.*

181 *gentium*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hæc gens*, G. *hujus gentis.*

H

106 *HEI*, Interjection.

34 *Hercule*, N. S. prop. 3 Dec. Nom. *hic Hercules*, G. *hujus Herculis*, Plur. *caret.*

105 *Heu*, Interject.

30 *his*, Pron. Art. prim. Nom. *hic, hæc, hoc*, Gen. *hujus.*

87 *Homero*, N. S. prop. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic Homerus*, Gen. *hujus Homeri*, Plur. *caret.*

107 *hominem*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic & hæc homo*, Gen. *hujus hominis.*

149 *horis*, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc hora*, Gen. *hujus horæ.*

33 *horum*, Pron. Art. Prim. Nom. *hic, hæc, hoc*, Gen. *hujus.*

56, 70 *huic*, idem.

47, 73 *hujus*, idem.

70 *hoſtibus*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic & hæc hoſtis*, Gen. *hoſtis.*

I.

Rule.

159 IBo, V. Neut. 4 Con. *eo, is, ivi, īri, eundi, do, dum, itum, u, iturus.*

55, 191 *illo*, Pron. Prim. Nom. *ille, illa, illud*, Gen. *illius.*

139 *illorum, idem.*

186 *illi, idem.*

92 *imperat*, V. Acc. Com. 1 Con. *impero, ras, ravi, rare, randi; ratum, u, rans, aturus.*

200, 201 *in*, Preposition governs sometimes an Accusative and sometimes an Ablative Case.

32 *ingenii*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc ingenium*, Gen. *hujus ingenii.*

76 *incusat*, V. Acc. Com. 1 Con. *incuso, sas, avi, sare, sandi, do, dum; tum, u; ans, turus.*

110 *induo*, V. Acc. 3 Con. *induo, is, ui, ĕre; endi, do, dum; dutum, u; ens, turus.*

142 *inter*, Preposition governs an Accusative Case.

162 *interest*, V. Imp. *interest, intererat, fuit, fuerat, erit, interesse.*

184, 185 *instar*, A Verb of likeness.

64 *ipsius*, Pron. Prim. Nom. *ipse, ipsa, sum*, Gen. *ipsius.*

109 *ipso*, *idem.*

201 *ignibus*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic ignis*, Gen. *hujus ignis.*

25 *irritamenta*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc irritamentum*, Gen. *hujus ti.*

57 *ira*, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc ira*, Gen. *hujus iræ.*

198 *Italia*, N. S. Prop. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc Italia*, Gen. *hujus Italiæ.*

67 *justus*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *justus, justa, justum*, Gen. *ti, tæ, ti.*

165, 134 *juvat*, V. Imp. *juvat, juvabat, juvit, juverat, juvabit, juvare.*

168 *juvant*,

Rule.

168 *juvant*, V. Acc. 1 Con. *juvo, vas; juvi, vare, vandi; vatum, u; vans, vaturus.*

L.

118 *Lactis*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hoc lac.* Gen. *hujus lactis*, Plur. *caret.*

196 *lactasses*, V. Acc. 1 Con. *lacto, lactas, avi; are, tandi; tum, u; tans, staturus.*

53 *latus*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *latus, ta, tum*; Gen. *lati, tæ, ti.*

52 *latus*; *idem.*

38 *laniorum*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic lanius*, Gen. *hujus lanii.*

130 *laudatur*, V. Pas. 1 Con. *laudor, daris vel laudare, tus sum vel fui, dari, atus, andus.*

17 *loci*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic locus*, Gen. *ci*, Plur. Nom. *hi loci & hæc loca.*

197 *loco*; *idem.*

41 *longissimus*. N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *longissimus, ma, mum.*

51 *longus*, *idem*, *longus, ga, gum.*

M.

162 *Magistratus*, N. S. 4 Decl. Nom. *hic magistratus*, Gen. *hujus magistratus.*

163 *magni*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *magnus, na, num*, Gen. *magni, næ, ni.*

98 *Majoribus*, N. S. 3 Decl. Sing. caret, Plur. Nom. *hi majores*, Gen. *horum majorum.*

66 *mandavit*, V. Acc. 1 Con. *mando, das, davi; dare, dandi; tum, u; ans, aturus.*

69 *Mælibei*, N. S. Prop. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic Mælibeus*, Gen. *bei*, Plur. caret.

50 *memorande*, Part. in *dus*. Nom. *memorandus, da, dum*, Gen. *di, dæ, di.*

Rule.

81. *meminerint*, V. Defec. Indic. *memini*, *meminerām*, Imper. *memento*, Plur. *mementote*, Potent. *meminerim*, *nissem*, *minero*, Infin. *meminisse*.

165 *me*, Pron. Prim. Nom. *ego*, Gen. *mei*, Voc. caret.

19 *meus*, Pron. Deriv. Nom. *meus*, *a*, *um*, Gen. *mei*, *æ*, *i*.

40 *meus*, *idem*.

155 *meæ*, *idem*.

70 *meum*, *idem*,

41 *manuum*, N. S. 4 Decl. Nom. *hæc manus*, Gen. *hujus manūs*.

4 *mentiri*, V. Dep. 4 Con. *mentiri*, *iris*, *vel ire*, *itus sum vel fui*, *iri*, *tiendi*, *do*, *dum*; *itum*, *u*; *iens*, *titurus*.

54 *melle*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hoc mel*, Gen. *hujus mellis*, Plur. Nom. *hæc mella*, Acc. *hæc mella*, Voc. *ô mella*.

144 *mellis*, *idem*.

122 *meritus es*, V. Dep. 2 Con. *mereor*; *reris vel rere*, *meritus sum vel fui*, *reri*, *ritus*, *rendus*.

83, &c. *mihi*, Pron. Prim. Nom. *ego*, Gen. *mei*.

96 *minatus est*, V. Dep. 1 Con. *minor*, *aris vel are*, *atus sum vel fui*, *ari*; *di*, *do*, *dum*; *tum*, *u*; *ans*, *turus*.

134 *morari*, V. Dep. 1 Con. *moror*, *raris vel rare*, *ratus sum vel fui*, *rari*, *di*; *tum*, *u*; *rus*.

184 *montis*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic mons*, Gen. *hujus montis*.

89, 123 *multis*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *multus*, *ta*, *tum*, Gen. *ti*, *tæ*, *ti*.

190 *multo*, *idem*.

58 *modis*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic modus*, Gen. *hujus modi*.

114 *minimo*, N. Ad. 3 Term. *minimus*, *ma*, *mum*; Gen. *minimi*, *mæ*, *mi*.

N

N.

Rule.

49 NAtus, N. Ad. or rather Part. of the Pret. Nom. *natus, ta, tum*; Gen. *ti, tæ, ti.*

126 *natus eſt*, V. Dep. 3 Con. *naſcor, ceris, vel cere*; *natus ſum vel fui, ci, di, tum.*

102 *nautas*, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. *hic nauta*, Gen. *tæ.*

30 *nobis*, Pron. Prim. Nom. *ego*, Gen. *mei.*

31 *novitatis*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hæc novitas*, Gen. *tatis*, Plur. caret.

68 *nos*, Pron. Prim. Nom. *ego*, Gen. *mei.*

22 *nummi*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic nummus*, Gen. *hujus nummi.*

35 *nulli*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *nullus, la, lum*, Gen. *nullius*, Voc. caret.

156 *nutritus*, Part. Pret. Nom. *nutritus, ta, tum*, Gen. *ti, tæ, ti.* from the V. *nutrior.*

O.

94 OBtemperat, V. Acc. Com. 1 Con. *obtempero, ras, avi, are, andi*; *tum, us*; *ans, turus.*

186 *obviam*, Adverb.

59 *odio*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc odium*, Gen. *hujus odii.*

71 *officium*, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc officium*, Gen. *hujus officii.*

119 *officii*, *idem.*

81 *omnia*, N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. *hic & hæc omnis & hoc omne*, Gen. *omnis*, Voc. caret.

13,25 *opes*, N. S. 3 Decl. Sing. caret. Plur. Nom. *hæ opes*, Gen. *harum opum.*

29 *opus*, N. S. 3 Decl. *hoc opus*, Gen. *operis.*

30 *opus*, N. Ad. invariabile.

60 *operis*, *idem*; as Rule 29.

Rule.

109 *Oremus*, V. Acc. 1 Con. *oro, ras, ravi; rare, di; tum, u; rans, raturus.*

143 *orandum*, Ger. in *dum*, from the Verb *oro, ras, ravi.*

P.

6 *Partim*; Adverb.

11 *pars*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hæc pars*, Gen. *hujus partis.*

23 *paterna*, N. Adj. 3 Term. Nom. *paternus, na, num*; Gen. *ni, næ, ni.*

24 *pater*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic pater*, Gen. *hujus patris.*

26 *paululum*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *paullulus, la, lum*, Gen. *li, læ, li.*

47 *par*, N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. *hic, hæc & hoc par*, Gen. *hujus paris.*

57 *pallidus*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *pallidus, da, dum*, Gen. *di, dæ, di.*

58 *pallida*, *idem.*

86 *parvis*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *parvus, va, vum*, Gen. *vi, væ, vi*; *parvus, minor, minimus.*

94 *patri*, the same as *pater*, Rule 24.

136 *parentes*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic & hæc parens*, Gen. *parentis.*

152 *pateat*, V. N. 2 Con. *pateo, tes, tui, & passus sum vel fui, tere, tendi*; *sum, u*; *ens, surus.*

173 *palmas*, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc palma*, Gen. *hujus palmæ.*

178 *parentibus*, the same with *parentes*, 136.

23 *pecuniæ*, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc pecunia*, Gen. *hujus pecuniæ.*

45 *pessimus*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *pessimus, ma, mum*, Gen. *mi, mæ, mi.*

51 *pedes*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic pes*, Gen. *pedis.*

52 *pedibus*, *idem.*

53 *pedum*,

Rule.

53 *pedum, idem.*

74 *pendo, dis; pependi, dere; pendendi, do, dum; ſum, us dens, ſurus,* V. Acc. 3 Con.

104 *percontatorem,* N. S. 3 Dec. Nom. *hic percontator,* Gen. *hujus percontatoris.*

124 *peritis,* N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *peritus, ta, tum,* Gen. *periti, tæ, ti.*

176 *peroſa,* N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *peroſus, ſa, ſum,* Gen. *peroſi, ſæ, ſi.*

177 *peroſi, idem.*

205 *pietas,* N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hæc pietas,* Gen. *pietatis.*

72 *plurimi,* N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *plurimus, ma, mum,* Gen. *plurimi, mæ, mi.*

192 *plus,* Adverb.

194 *pluris,* N. Dip. Nom. *hoc plus,* Gen. *hujus pluris,* Dat. Acc. Voc. Abl. *caret,* Plur. *hi & hæ plures, & hæc plura.*

193 *Platonem,* N. S. Prop. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic Plato,* Gen. *Platonis,* Plur. *caret.*

20 *potuit,* V. N. Com. *irr. poſſum, potes, potui; poſſe, potens.*

42 *poetarum,* N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. *hic poeta,* Gen. *hujus poetæ.*

82 *potiti ſunt,* V. Dep. 4 Con *potior, tiris vel re, titus ſum vel fui, tiri, di, tum, turus.*

167 *pœniteret,* V. Imp. 2 Con. *pœnitet, tebat, nituit, tuerat, pœnitebit, pœnitere.*

202 *poſt,* Prep. turned into an Adverb.

108 *poſſe,* V. Acc. 3 Con. *poſco, ſcis, popoſci, cere, cendi,* Sup. *caret poſcens.*

34, 64 *primus,* N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *primus, ma, mum,* Gen. *primi, mæ, mi.*

76 *probri,* N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc probrum,* Gen. *hujus probri.*

91 *promitto,* V. Acc. Com. 3 Con. *promitto, tis, miſi, mittere, tendi; ſum, us; tens, ſurus.*

98 *præ-*

Rule.

98 *præluxi*, V. N. Com. 2 Con. *præluceo, ces; luxi, lucere; di, ctum; ens, luctarus.*

99 *præstat*, V. N. Com. 1 Con. *præsto, tas, titi; stare, di; tum, tu; tans, turus.*

125 *præstaret*, *idem.*

120 *prosequor*, V. Dep. 3 Con. *prosequor, queris vel ere, cutus sum vel fui, equi, do, tum.*

133 *præceptore*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic præceptor*, Gen. *hujus præceptoris.*

160 *profectus esses*, V. Dep. 3 Con. *proficiscor, ficisceris vel ciscere, profectus sum vel fui, ciſci, di, ctum; cens, cturus.*

178 *prognatus*, N. Ad. 3 Term. (or part) Nom. *prognata, ta, tum*, Gen. *prognati, tæ, ti.*

179 *Priamus*, N. S. Prop. Nom. *hic priamus*, Gen. *hujus Priami*, Plur. *caret.*

188, 191 *propius*, Adverb.

196 *produceres*, V. Acc. Com. 3 Con. *produco, cis, duxi, cere, cendi; ctum, u; cens, cturus.*

148 *purgatu*, latter Supine from the Verb *purgo, purgas, purgavi.*

170 *pugnatur*, V. Imp. Paſ. *pugnatur, pugnabatur, natum eſt vel fuit, pugnatum erat vel fuerat, pugnabitur.*

Q.

15, &c. *QUi*, Pron. Rel. Nom. *qui, quæ, quod*, Gen. *cujus*, Voc. *caret.*

18 *quæ*, *idem.*

21 *quod*, *idem.*

37 *quarum*, *idem.*

44 *quanto*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *quantus, ta, tum*, Gen. *quanti, ti, tæ.*

195 *quæ*, Conjun. Cop.

R.

Rule.

12 *Ara*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *rarus, ra, rum*, Gen. *rari, ræ, ri.*

7 *rediisse*, V. N. Com. 4 Con. *redeo, dis, divi; dire, diundi; itum, u; diens, diturus.*

8 *rediisti*, *idem.*

9 *redintegratio*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hæc redintegratio*, Gen. *hujus tionis.*

79 *rerum*, N. S. 5 Decl. Nom. *hæc res*, Gen. *hujus rei.*

81 *reminiscitur*, V. Dep. 3 Con. *reminiscor, ceris vel cere, recordatus sum vel fui, ci, cendi, recordatum, u; cens, turus.*

84 *respondet*, V. Acc. Com. 2 Con. *respondeo, des; spondi, ēre, dendi; sum, dens.*

97 *rei-pub.* N. S. 5 Decl. Nom. *hæc res-publica*, Gen. *hujus rei-publicæ.*

114 *redime*, V. Acc. Com. 3 Con. *redimo, mis, emi, dimere; dimendi, do, dum; demptum, tu, dimens, dempturus.*

150 *regnabitur*, V. Imp. Pas. *regnatur, regnabatur, natum est vel fuit, erat vel fuerat, regnabitur.*

163 *refert*, V. Imp. *refert, referebat, retulit, lerat, referet.*

153 *Romæ*, N. S. Prop. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc Roma*, Gen. *hujus Romæ*, Plur. *caret.*

160 *Româ*, *idem.*

177 *Romanis*, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. *Romanus, na, num*, or N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. *Romanus, ni.*

157 *ruri*, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. *hoc rus*, Gen. *hujus ruris.*

159 *rus*, *idem.*

S.

79 *Satagit*, V. Neut. Com. 3 Con. *satago, gis; egi, agere, di*, Sup. *car. satagens.*

149 *sapit*,

Rule,

149 *ſapit*, V. Neut. 3 Con. *ſapio, pis, ſapui & ſapivi; ĕre, endi*, ſup. caret, *ſapiens.*

183 *ſatis*, Adverb Quant.

35 *ſecundus*, N. Adj. 3 Term. Nom. *ſecundus, da, dum.* Gen. *ſecundi, dæ, di.*

83 *ſeritur*, V. Imp. Paſ. *ſeritur, ſeribatur, ſeritum eſt vel fuit, erat vel fuerat, ſeretur.*

167 *ſenectutis*, N. Subſt. 3 Decl. Nom. *hæc Senectus*, Gen. *tutis*, Plur. caret.

82 *ſignorum*, N. Subſt. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc ſignum*, Gen. *hujus ſigni.*

107 *ſonat*, V. Act. 1 Conj. *ſono, as, nui, nare; ndi, do, dum; nitum, tu; nans, niturus.*

145 *ſpectatum*, firſt Sup. from the Verb *ſpecto, tas.*

85 *ſtudetis*, V. Neut. 2 Conj. *ſtudeo, des, dui, dere; dendi*; Sup. caret, *dens.*

138 *ſtudium*, Nom. Sub. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc ſtudium*, Gen. *hujus ſtudii.*

172 *ſtatur*, V. Imp. Paſ. *ſtatur, ſtabatur, ſtatum eſt vel fuit, ſtatum erat vel fuerat, ſtabitur.*

195 *ſtat*, V. Neut. 1 Con. *ſto, ſtas, ſteti, ſtare; ſtandi; tum, tu; ſtans, ſtaturus.*

80 *ſuccurro*, V. Neut. Com. 3 Conj. *ſuccurro, ris, ri, rĕre; rendi; ſum, u; rens, rſus.*

102 *ſuppetit*, V. Act. Com. 3 Conj. *ſuppeto, tis, tii & tivi, petere; endi; tum, u; ens, turus.*

112 *ſubegit*, V. Neut. Com. 3 Conj. *ſubigo, gis, egi, gĕre; di; actum, u; gens, acturus.*

176 *ſegnitiem*, Nom. Subſt. 5 Decl. Nom. *hæc ſegnities*, Gen. *hujus ſegnetiei*, Plur. caret.

T.

21 *Tardat*, V. Act. 1 Conj. *tardo, das, davi, dare dandi; datum, u; dans, daturus.*

115 *tanti*, N. Adj. 3 Term. *tantus, ta, tum.* Gen *tanti, tæ, ti,*

10 *tædet*

Rule,

10 *tædet*, V. Imp. *tædet, debat, duit & pertæsum eſt vel fuit, duerat, & pertæsum erat vel fuerat, tædebit.*

7 *te*, Pron. Prim. Nom. *tu*, Gen. *tui*, Voc. caret.

18 *terra*, N. Subſt. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc terra*, Gen. *hujus terræ.*

113 *teruncio*, N. Subſt. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc teruncium*, Gen. *hujus teruncii.*

141 *tegendo*, Ger. in *do*, from the Verb *tego.*

173 *tendens*, Part. Preſ. Nom. *hic hæc & hoc tendens*, Gen. *tendentis*, from the Verb *tendo.*

82 *temporis*, N. Subſt. 3 Decl. Nom. *hoc tempus*, Gen. *hujus temporis.*

87 *tempori*, idem.

45 *tanto*, N. Adj. 3 Term. Nom. *tantus, ta, tum*, Gen. *tanti, tæ, ti.*

100 *Teucros*, N. Subſt. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic Teucrus*, Gen. *hujus Teucri*,

52 *Thebis*, N. Subſt. Prop. 1 Decl. Sing. caret, Plur. Nom. *hæ Thebæ*, Gen. *harum Thebarum.*

90 *tibi*, Pron. Prim. Nom. *tu*, Gen. *tui*, Voc. caret.

61 *tui*, idem.

48 *turis*, Pron. Poſſeſſ. Nom. *tuus, a, um*, Gen. *i, æ, i.*

62 *tuo*, idem.

10 *tunica*, N. Subſt. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc tunica*, Gen. *hujus tunicæ.*

82 *tunc*, Adverb of Time.

38 *tueri*, V. Depon. 2 Conj. *tueor, eris vel ere, tuitus ſum vel fui, eri; di; tutum & tuitum, u; ens, turus & iturus.*

V.

16 *VAlebant*, V. Neut. 2 Conj. *valeo, es, ui, ere; lendi; itum, u; ens, iturus.*

33 *vapulabis*, V. Neut. Paſ. 1 Conj. *vapulo, las, latus ſum vel fui, are; di; atum; ans.*

Rule,

146 *vapulatum,* firſt Sup. from the ſame Verb.

181 *ubi,* Adverb of Place.

63 *veſtrum,* Pro. Prim. Nom. *tu,* Gen. *tui,* Voc. car.

93 *venis,* N. Subſt. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc vena,* Gen. *hujus venæ.*

108 *veniam,* N. Subſt. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc venia,* Gen. *hujus veniæ.*

145 *veniunt,* V. Neut. 4 Conj. *venio, nis, ni, īre; iendi; tum, u; iens, turus.*

152 *verſatur,* V. Paſſ. 1 Conj. *verſor, ſaris vel ſare, ſatus ſum vel fui, ari, tus.*

187 *venit,* the ſame with *veniunt. Rule* 145.

192 *vehicula,* N. Subſt. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc vehiculum,* Gen. *hujus vehiculi.*

1 *via,* N. Subſt. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc via,* Gen. *viæ.*

6 *virorum,* N. Subſt. 2 Decl. Nom. *hic vir,* Gen. *hujus viri.*

199 *viris,* idem.

43 *vilius,* N. Adj. 3 Artic. Nom. *hic & hæc vilior & hoc vilius,* Gen. *hujus vilioris.*

67 *videri,* V. Dep. 2 Conj. *videor, eris vel ere, viſus ſum vel fui, deri; di; ſum; dens.*

105 *vivebat,* V. Neut. 3 Conj. *vivo, vis, xi, vere; di; ctum, u; ens, turus.*

106 *vivere,* idem.

166 *vita,* Nom. Subſt. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc vita,* Gen. *vitæ.*

136 *videndi,* Gerund in *di,* from the Verb *video, es.*

63 *unuſquiſque,* N. Disj. Com. Nom. *unuſquiſque, unaquæque, unumquodque,* Gen. *uniuſcujuſque.*

85 *unum,* N. Adj. 3 Term. Nom. *unus, na, num,* Gen. *unius.*

2 *vos,* Pron. Prim. Nom. *tu,* Gen. *tui,* Voc. *ô tu.*

36 *vobis,* idem.

84 *votis,* N. Subſt. 2 Decl. Nom. *hoc votum,* Gen. *hujus voti.*

24 *urbi,* N. Sub. 3. Decl. Nom. *hæc urbs,* Gen. *hujus urbis.*

188 *urbem*

Rule,

188 *urbem*, idem.

33 *utrum*, N. Adj. 3 Term. Nom. *uter*, *tra*, *trum*, Gen. *utrius*.

39 *utroque*, idem, adding *que* to each term.

96 *utrique*, idem.

152 *ulnâ*, N. Subſt. 1 Decl. Nom. *hæc ulna*, Gen. *hujus ulnæ*.

154 *viximus*, the ſame with *vivebat*. *Rule* 165.

X.

193 *Xenophontem*, N. Subſt. Prop. 3 Decl. Nom. *hic Xenophon*, Genit. *hujus Xenophontis*, Plur. caret.

The

The Rule of Conſtruing.

I. SEek out the Principal Verb, then take the Vocative Caſe, or whatſoever is inſtead of it, or hangs upon it ſerving to make it plain.

II. The Nom. Caſe of the Principal Verb, or whatſoever is inſtead of it, or depends upon it, to make it plain.

III. Then the Principal Verb, and whatſoever depends on it, ſerving to expound it, as an Adverb, or an Infinitive Mood.

IV. Laſtly, the Caſe which the Verb properly governs, and all the other Caſes after it in order. As firſt, the Genit. then the Dat. afterwards the Ablative. The Subſtantive and Adjective muſt be Conſtrued together, except the Adjective do govern ſome other word, or have ſome word joyned to it, to which it paſſeth the ſignification, and the Prepoſition muſt be joyned with his Caſe.

Yet this Order is often altered by Interrogatives, Relatives, certain Adverbs, and Conjunctions. *Lud. Literar.* Pag. 99. *Et Praxis* M^ri *Leech*, Pag. 24.

FINIS.